יהוה

THE New Testament of our Lord and Saviour IESVS CHRIST.

Newly Translated out of the Original Greeke: and with the former Translations diligently compared and revised, By his Majesties speciall Commandement.

¶ Imprinted at London by *Bonham Norton*, and *John Bill*, Printers to the Kings most Excellent Majestie. 1623.

¶ Cum Privilegio.

¶ THE ORDER OF THE bookes of the New Testament, with their proper names and *number of Chapters.*

THE Gospel written by Matthew hath Chapters	28
By Marke.	16
By Luke.	24
By Iohn.	21
The Actes of the Apostles	28

¶ THE EPISTLES.

PAul to the Romanes.	16
The first to the Corinthians.	16
The second to the Corinthians.	13
To the Galatians.	6
To the Ephesians.	6
To the Philippians.	4
To the Collossians.	4
The first to the Thessalonians.	5
The second to the Thessalonians.	3
The first to Timothy.	6
The second to Timothy.	4
To Titus.	3
To Philemon.	one
The Epistle to the Hebrewes.	13
The Epistle of Iames.	5
The first Epistle of Peter.	5
The second Epistle of Peter.	3
The first Epistle of Iohn.	5
The second Epistle of Iohn.	one
The third Epistle of Iohn.	one
The Epistle of Iude.	one
The Reuelation of Iohn.	22

¶ THE

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ. 18 His conception and birth. 21.23. His names.

THe Booke of the * generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of Dauid the sonne of Abraham. *Luke. 3.23

2 * Abraham begate Isaac, and * Isaac begate Iacob, and * Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren. *Gene. 21.3 *Gen. 25.26 *Gen. 29.35

3 And * Iudas begate Phares and Zara of Thamar, and * Phares begate Esrom, and Esrom begate Aram. *Gen. 38.27 *1. Chro. 2.5

4 And Aram begate Aminadab, and Aminadab begate Naasson, and Naasson begate Salmon. ruth 4.18.

5 And Salmon begate Boos of Rachab, and Boos begate Obed of Ruth, and Obed begate Iesse.

6 And * Iesse begate Dauid the King, and * Dauid the King begate Solomon of her that had beene the wife of Uriah. * 1. Sam. 16. 1. & 17. 12. *2. Sa. 12. 24.

7 And * Solomon begate Roboam, and Roboam begate Abia, and Abia begate Asa. *1. Chr. 3. 10.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat, and Iosaphat begate Ioram, and Ioram begate Ozias.

9 And Ozias begate Ioatham, and Ioatham begate Achas, and Achas begate Ezekias.

10 * And Ezekias begate Manasses, and Manasses begate Amon, and Amon begate Iosias. *2. King 20 21.

11 And ‖ Iosias begate Iechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon. 1 Chr. 3. 13

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Iechonias begate Salathiel, and Salathiel begate Zorobabel. ‖ *Some reade Iosias begate Iakim and: Iakim begate Iechonias.*

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud, and Abiud begate Eliakim, and Eliakim begate Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begate Achim, and Achim begate Eliud. *1. Chron. 3. 16, 17.

15 And

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne Iesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid are foureteene generations: and from Dauid vntill the carying away into Babylon, are foureteene generations: and from the carying away into Babylon vnto Christ, are foureteene generations.

Luke 1.27. 18 ¶ Now the *birth of Iesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Ioseph (before they came together) shee was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away priuily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph thou sonne of Dauid, feare not to take vnto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

Luke 1.31. 21 And shee shall bring forth a sonne, * and thou shalt call his Name Iesus: for hee shall saue his people from their sinnes.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

* Esay. 7.14 *Or, his name shalbe called.* 23 * Behold a Virgin shall bee with child, and shall bring forth a sonne, and || they shall call his Name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with vs.)

24 Then Ioseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and tooke vnto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till shee had brought forth her first borne sonne, and he called his Name Iesus.

CHAP. II.

1 The wise men come to Christ, 11 and worship him, 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt.

Luke 2.6. NOw when *Iesus was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came wisemen from the East, to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is hee that is borne King of the Iewes? for wee haue seene his Starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the King had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And when hee had gathered all the chiefe Priests and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be borne.

5 And they said vnto him, In Bethlehem of Iudea: For thus it is written by the Prophets;

6 *And thou Bethlehem in the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come a Gouernour, that shall || rule my people Israel. *Mich. 5 2 iohn 7.4 ||Or, feede.

7 Then Herod when hee had priuily called the Wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the Starre appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Goe, and search diligently for the yong childe, and when yee haue found him, bring mee word againe, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and loe, the Starre which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came & stood ouer where the yong child was.

10 When they saw the Starre, they reioyced with exceeding great ioy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the yong childe with Mary his mother, and fell downe and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they || presented vnto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. ||Or, offer

12 And being warned of God in a dreame, that they should not returne to Herod, they departed into their owne countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise and take the yong childe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there vntill I bring thee word: for Herod will seeke the yong childe, to destroy him.

14 When hee arose, he tooke the yong childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there vntill the death of Herod, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, *Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. *Ose. 11

16 ¶ Then Herod, when hee saw that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeeres old and vnder, according to the time which hee had diligently enquired of the Wisemen.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by *Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *Iere. 31

18 In Rama was there a voyce heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the yong childe and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the yong childes life.

21 And he arose, and tooke the yong childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Judea, in the roome of his father Herod, he was afraid to goe thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shall be called a Nazarite.

CHAP, III.

1 Iohn preacheth: 4 His apparell and meate. 5 Hee baptizeth. 8 The fruits of repentance. 12 Christ is baptized.

arke 1. 4. IN those dayes came * John the Baptist, preaching in
3. 2. the wilderness of Judea,

2 And saying, Repent yee: for the Kingdome of heaven is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the Prophet
40. 3. Esaias, saying, * The voyce of one crying in the wilder-
ke 1. 3. nesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his rayment of Camels haire, and a leatherne girdle about his loynes, and his meate was locusts and wilde hony.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Iordane,

6 And were baptized of him in Iordane, confessing their sinnes.

7 ¶ But when hee saw many of the Pharisees and
13. 34 Sadducees come to his Baptisme, he said vnto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

nswe- 8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‖ meete for repentance.
to 4. 9 And thinke not to say within your selues, * Wee
ment have Abraham to our father: for I say vnto you, that
18. 39. God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

10 And now also the axe is laid vnto the roote of the trees:

trees: * Therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire. *Chap.

11 *I indeed baptize you with water vnto repentance: but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare, he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. *Mark. iohn 1. luke 3.

12 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheate into the garner: but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ *Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Iordane, vnto Iohn to be baptized of him: *Mark. luke 3.

14 But Iohn forbade him, saying, I haue neede to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when hee was baptized, went vp straight way out of the water: and loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voyce from heauen, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ is tempted and ouercommeth. 17 Beginneth to preach. 18 Calleth some to be disciples.

THen was *Iesus led vp of the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the deuill. *Mark. luke 4.

2 And when he had fasted forty dayes, and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Sonne of God, commaund that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answered, and sayd, It is written, *Man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut.

5 Then the deuill taketh him vp into the holy Citie, and setteth him on a pinacle of the Temple,

6 And saith vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: For it is written, *He shall giue his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shal beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal. 9.

7 Iesus saith vnto him, It is written againe, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.

8 Againe the deuill taketh him vp into an exceeding

high mountaine, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of
the world, and the glory of them:
9 And saith vnto him, All these things will I giue
thee, if thou wilt fall downe, and worship me.
10 Then saith Iesus vnto him, Get thee hence Satan;
t.6.13. for it is written: * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
9.20. and him onely shalt thou serue.
11 Then the deuill leaueth him, and behold, Angels
came, and ministred vnto him.
1.14. 12 ¶ * Now when Iesus had heard that Iohn was
1.14. || cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.
1.43. 13 And leauing Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Ca-
eline. pernaum, which is vpon the Sea coast, in the borders of
Zabulon and Nephthali:
14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by
Esaias the Prophet, saying,
9.1. 15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali,
by the way of the Sea beyond Iordane, Galilee of the
Gentiles:
16 The people which sate in darkenesse, saw great
light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow
of death, light is sprung vp.
1.14. 17 ¶ * From that time Iesus began to preach, and to
say, Repent, for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.
1.16. 18 ¶ * And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galilee saw
two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his bro-
ther casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)
19 And he saith vnto them, Follow me: and I will
make you fishers of men.
20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed
him.
21 And going out from thence, he saw other two bre-
thren, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother,
in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets,
and he called them.
22 And they immediatly left the ship and their father,
and followed him.
23 ¶ And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in
their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the
Kingdome, and healing all manner of sicknesse, and all
manner of disease among the people.
24 And his fame went thorowout all Syria: and
they brought vnto him all sicke people that were taken
with diuers diseases and torments, and those which
were possessed with deuils, and those which were luna-
ticke, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.
25 And

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Hierusalem, and from Iudea, and from beyond Iordane.

CHAP. V.

3 Who are blessed. 13 The Apostles are the salt and light of the world.

AND seeing the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 * Blessed are the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *Luk

4 Blessed are they that mourne: for they shall be comforted.

5 * Blessed are the meeke: for they shall inherite the earth. *Psal.

6 Blessed are they that doe hunger and thirst after righteousnesse: * for they shall be filled. *Isai.

7 Blessed are the mercifull: for they shall obtaine mercy.

8 * Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. *Psalm

9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shalbe called the children of God.

10 * Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *1.P

11 Blessed are ye, when men shall reuile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of * euill against you falsely † for my sake. *1.Pet. †Gr. lyi

12 Reioyce and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heauen: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: * But if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men. *Mar.9 luke 14 *Mark luke 8 and 11

14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid. ‖ The the Ou figure metaphi winin against when

15 Neither doe men * light a candle, and put it vnder a ‖ bushell: but on a candlestick, and it giueth light to all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen.

17 ¶ Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law or *1.P

or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

16,17 18 For verily I say vnto you, * Till heauen and earth passe, one iote or one title, shall in no wise passe from the Law, till all be fulfilled.

.10. 19 * Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least commandements, and shall teach men so, he shall bee called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall doe, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen.

20 For I say vnto you, That except your righteousnes shall exceede the righteousnesse of the Scribes and Pharisees, yee shall in no case enter into the Kingdome of heauen.

them. 21 ¶ Ye haue heard that it was sayd || by them of old

o.13 time, * Thou shalt not kill: and whosoeuer shall kill, shall

17. be in danger of the iudgement.

22 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the Iudgement: and whosoeuer shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the Councell: but whosoeuer shall say, Thou foole, shall be in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift vnto the Altar, and there remẽbrest that thy brother hath ought against thee:

24 Leaue there thy gift before the Altar, and goe thy way: first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

.58. 25 * Agree with thine aduersary quickly whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the aduersary deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say vnto thee, Thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast payed the vttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was sayd by them of old

o.14. time. * Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

.18.8 29 * And if thy right eye || offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

.47. 30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and

cause cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of

offend. thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31 It

31 It hath bene said, * Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him giue her a writing of diuorcement. *Deut. luke 1

32 But I say vnto you. That whosoeuer shal put away his wife, saueing for the cause of fornication, causeth her to to commit adultery: and whosoeuer shall marry her that is diuorced, committeth adultery. 1. cor.

33 ¶ Againe, ye haue heard that it hath bene said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe vnto the Lord thine oathes. *Exo. leuit. deut. 5

34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footestoole: neither by Hierusalem, for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thy head, because thou canst not make one haire white or blacke.

37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay: For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill. *Iam.

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bene sayd, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. *Exo. leuit. 2

39 But I say vnto you, * That ye resist not euill: but whosoeuer shall smite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him the other also. deut. * Luk. rom. 1. cor.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloake also.

41 And whosoeuer shall compell thee to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

42 Giue to him that asketh thee: and * from him that would borrow of thee, turne not thou away. *Deut.

43 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bene sayd, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: *Leui.

44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your enemies, blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, and * pray for them which despitefully vse you, and persecute you: *Luk. *Luk. acts 7

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heauen: for he maketh his sunne to rise on the euill and on the good, and sendeth raine on the iust, and on the vniust.

46 * For if ye loue them which loue you, what reward haue ye? Doe not euen the Publicanes the same? *Luk.

47 And if ye salute your brethren onely, what doe you more then others? Doe not euen the Publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, euen as your Father, which is in heauen, is perfect.

CHAP.

1 Of almes, 5 Prayer, 14 Forgiuing. 19 Our treasure. 24 God and Mammon.

TAke heede that yee doe not your almes before men, to bee seene of them: otherwise yee haue no reward ‖ of your Father which is in heauen.

2 Therefore * when thou doest thine almes, ‖ doe not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites doe, in the Synagogues, and in the streetes, that they may haue glory of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

4 That thine almes may bee in secret: And thy Father which seeth in secret, himselfe shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not bee as the hypocrites are: for they loue to pray standing in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streetes, that they may be seene of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, vse not vaine * repetitions, as the heathen doe. For they thinke that they shall bee heard for their much speaking.

8 Bee not yee therefore like vnto them: for your Father knoweth what things yee haue neede of, before yee aske him.

9 After this manner therefore pray yee: * Our Father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy Kingdome come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debts, as wee forgiue our debters.

13 And leade vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill: for thine is the Kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for euer. Amen.

14 For if yee forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father will also forgiue you.

15 But if yee forgiue not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgiue your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreouer, when yee fast, bee not as the hypocrites,

crites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appeare vnto men to fast: Verely I say vnto you they haue their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoynt thine head, and wash thy face.

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp for your selues treasure vpon earth where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where theeues breake thorow, and steale.

20 * But lay vp for your selues treasures in heauen, where neither moth nor rust doeth corrupt, and where theeues doe not breake thorow nor steale. * Luk. 1.tim.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart bee also.

22 * The light of the body is the eye: If therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. * Luk.

23 But if thine eye be euill, thy whole body shalbe full of darkenesse. If therefore the light that is in thee bee darkenesse, how great is that darkenesse?

24 ¶ * No man can serue two masters: for either hee will hate the one and loue the other, or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Yee cannot serue God and Mammon. * Luk

25 Therefore I say vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drinke, nor yet for your body what yee shall put on: is not the life more then meate? and the body then rayment? * Lu psal. 1 pet

26 Behold the fowles of the ayre: for they sowe not, neither doe they reape, nor gather into barnes, yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are yee not much better then they.

27 Which of you by taking thought, can adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why take yee thought for rayment? Consider the lillies of the field how they growe: they toile not, neither doe they spinne.

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory, was not araied like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the ouen: shall hee not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith.

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke? or wherewithall shall we bee clothed?

32 (For

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seeke:) for your heauenly Father knoweth that yee haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke yee first the kingdome of God, & his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow; for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it selfe: sufficient vnto the day is the euill thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ reproueth rash iudgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs 13 The wide and straight gate.

6.37. I Iudge * not that ye be not iudged.

1. 2 For with what iudgement yee iudge, yee shall bee iudged: * and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you againe.

4.24. 38. 3 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

6.41. 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let mee pull out the mote out of thine eye, and beholde a beame is in thine owne eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Giue not that which is holy vnto the dogs, neither cast yee your pearles before swine: lest they trample them vnder their feete, and turne againe and rent you.

1.22 7 ¶ * Aske, and it shall bee giuen you: seeke, and yee

1.24 shall find: knock, and it shall be opened vnto you.

.9. 8 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that

.24. seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh it shall bee o-

6. penen.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne aske bread, will he giue him a stone?

10 Or if he aske a fish, will he giue him a serpent?

11 If yee then, being euill know how to giue good gifts vnto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

12 Therefore all things * whatsoeuer yee would that

31. men should doe to you, doe yee euen so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

13 ¶ * Enter yee in at the strait gate, for wide is the

24 gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be that goe in thereat.

14 ¶ Be-

because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth vnto life, and few there be that finde it. ‖ Or, how

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

16 Yee shall know them by their fruites: * Doe men gather grapes of thornes, or figges of thistles? * Luke 6

17 Euen so euery good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth euill fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 * Euery tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire. * Chap. 3

20 Wherefore by their fruits you shall know them.

21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heauen: but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heauen. * Rom. 2 iames 1.

22 Many will say to me at that day, Lord, Lord, haue wee not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name haue cast out deuils? and in thy name done many wonderfull workes?

23 And then will I professe vnto them, * I neuer knew you: * depart from me, ye that worke iniquity. * Luk. 1 * Psal. 6

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoeuer heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him vnto a wise man, which built his house vpon a rocke: * Luke 6

25 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beate vpon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded vpon a rocke.

26 And euery one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall bee likened vnto a foolish man, which built his house vpon the sand:

27 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine. * Mark luke 4.

29 For hee taught them as one hauing authority, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ cleanseth the leper. 28 The deuils driuen out of two men, 31 goe into the herd of swine.

When hee was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

2 * And behold, there came a leper, & worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. * Mark 1. luke 5.

3 And

saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediately
his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Iesus saith vnto him, See thou tell no man,
but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer the
gift that Moses commanded, for a testimonie vnto
them.

5 ¶ And when Iesus was entred into Capernaum,
there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him.

6 And saying, Lord, my seruant lyeth at home sicke
of the palsie, grieuously tormented.

7 And Iesus saith vnto him, I will come, and heale
him.

8 The Centurion answered and said, Lord, I am
not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but
speake the word onely, and my seruant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man vnder authoritie, hauing souldiers
vnder me: and I say to this man, Goe, and he goeth: and
to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant
Doe this, and he doth it.

10 When Iesus heard it, hee marueiled, and said to
them that followed, Verely I say vnto you, I haue not
found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say vnto you, that many shall come from the
East, and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and
Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen:

12 But the children of the kingdome shall bee cast out
into vtter darkenesse: there shall be weeping and gnash-
ing of teeth.

13 And Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe thy way,
and as thou hast beleeued, so be it done vnto thee. And his
seruant was healed in the selfe same houre.

14 ¶ And when Iesus was come into Peters house,
he saw his wiues mother laid, and sicke of a feuer,

15 And hee touched her hand: and the feuer left her:
and shee arose, and ministred vnto them.

16 ¶ When the euen was come, they brought vnto
him many that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out
the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sicke.

17 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by
Esaias the Prophet, saying, Himselfe tooke our infir-
mities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 ¶ Now when Iesus saw great multitudes about
him, he gaue commandement to depart vnto the other side.

19 And a certaine Scribe came, and said vnto him,
Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And

20 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the ayre haue nests: but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my Father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow mee, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 And when hee was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 *And behold there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was couered with the waues: but he was asleepe. *Mar. 4. luke 8.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, saue vs, we perish.

26 And he saith vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the Sea, and there was a great calme.

27 But the men marueiled, saying, What manner of man is this, that euen the winds and the sea obey him?

28 * And when he was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, comming out of the tombes, exceeding fierce so that no man might passe by that way. *Mar. 5. luke 8.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, What haue we to doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of God? Art thou come hither to torment vs before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, an herd of many swine feeding.

31 So the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently downe a steep place into the Sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their way into the citie, and told euery thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the deuils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meet Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that hee would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ cureth the palsie, 9 calleth Matthew, 10 eateth with Publicanes and sinners.

AND hee entred into a ship and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

2 *And behold, they brought to him a man sicke of *Mar 2. 3. luke 5. 18.

the palsie, lying on on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne be of good cheare, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

3 And beholde, certaine of the Scribes sayd, within themselues, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, sayd Wherefore thinke you euill in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise and walke?

6 But that yee may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (Then saith hee to the sicke of the palsie) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe vnto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it they marueiled, & glorified God, which had giuen such power vnto men.

Mar. 2. 14. Luke 5. 27. 9 ¶ * And as Jesus passed forth from thence, hee saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custome: and hee saith vnto him, Follow me, And he arose and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Jesus sate at meat in the house, behold, many Publicanes and sinners came, & sate downe with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises saw it, they sayd vnto his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicans and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, hee sayd vnto them, They that be whole, need not a Physician, but they that are sicke.

Ose. 6. 6. Chap. 12. 7. 1. tim. 1. 15 Mar. 2. 18. Luke 5. 33. 13 But go ye and learne what that meaneth, * I will haue mercy and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, * but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, * Why doe we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bride chamber mourne, as long as the bridegroome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bridegroome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of ‖ new cloth vnto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it vp, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

‖ Or, raw, or vnwrought cloth.

17 Neither doe men put newe wine into old bottels, else the bottles breake, and the wine runneth out, and the bottels perish: but they put new wine into new bottels and both are preserued.

18 ¶ * Whi

18 ¶ *While he spake these things vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is euen now dead: but come and lay thine hand vpon her, and she shall liue. *Mar. 5. luke 8.

19 And Iesus arose and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 (¶ And beholde, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For shee sayd within her selfe, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Iesus turned him about, and when hee saw her, he said, Daughter be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole; and the woman was made whole from that houre.)

23 And when Iesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said vnto them, Giue place, for the mayd is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 But when the people were put forth, hee went in, and tooke her by the hand, and the mayd arose.

26 And the || fame hereof went abroad into all ẏ land. ||Or, the f

27 ¶ And when Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Iesus saith vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to doe this? They sayde vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched hee their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: And Iesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ *As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill, *Luke 11.

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe spake, and the multitudes marueiled, saying, It was neuer so seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees sayd, *Hee casteth out deuils through the prince of the deuils. *Chap. 12. 24. mar. 3. 22. luke 11. 15.

35 And Iesus went about all the cities, and villages, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sicknesse, and euery disease among the people. *Marke 6. luke 13. 2

ar.6.34. 36 ¶ *But when he saw the multitudes, hee was mo-
r, were ty- ued with compassion on them, because they || fainted, and
d and lay were scattered abroad, * as sheepe having no shepheard.
ne. 37 Then saith hee vnto his disciples, * The harueſt
um.27. truely is plenteous, but the labourers are few.
7. 38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the Harueſt, that he
uke 10. 2. will send forth labourers into his harueſt.

CHAP. X.

1 The Apostles are sent to doe miracles. 5 and to teach.

Mar.3 15. AND * when hee had called vnto him his twelue disci-
ke 9.1. ples, hee gaue them power || against vncleane spirits,
r, euer. to cast them out, and to heale all maner of sickenesse, and
all maner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these:
The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew
his brother, James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his
brother:

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, & Matthew
the Publicane, James the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus,
whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who
also betrayed him.

5 These twelue Iesus sent forth, and commanded
them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and
into any citie of the Samaritanes enter yee not:

Act.13.46. 6 *But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house
of Israel.

Luke 10.9. 7 And as yee goe, preach, saying, * The kingdome of
heauen is at hand:

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast
out deuils: freely ye haue received, freely giue.

Marke 6.8. 9 *|| Prouide neither gold, nor siluer, nor brasse in
ke 9.3.& your purses:
3.35.

10 Nor scrip for your iourney, neither two coats, nei-
Or, get. ther shoes, nor yet staues: * for the workeman is wor-
1.Tim 5.18 thy of his meat.)
ke 10.7.

11 *And into whatsoever citie, or towne ye shall enter
Luke 10.8. inquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till yee go
thence.

12 And when ye come into a house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vp-
on it; but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.

Mar.6.11. 14 *And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare
your words: when yee depart out of that house, or citie,
Act.13.51. * shake off the dust off your feet.

15 Verily

15 Verily I say vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for the land of Sodome & Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheepe in the midst of wolues: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and || harmlesse as doues. *Luke 1 || Or, sim

17 But beware of men, for they will deliuer you vp to the Councels, and they will scourge you in their Synagogues,

18 And yee shall bee brought before Gouernours and Kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 * But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought, how or what yee shall speake, for it shall bee giuen you in the same houre what ye shall speake. *Mar. 13 luke 12.

20 For it is not ye that speake, but the Spirit of your Father, which speaketh in you.

21 * And the brother shall deliuer vp the brother to death, and the father the child: & the children shall rise vp against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. *Luk. 21

22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake: * but he that endureth to the end, shall be saued. *Mar. 13

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee yee into another: for verily I say vnto you, ye shall not || haue gone ouer the cities of Israel, till ye Son of man be come. || Or, end o finish.

24 * The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his lord. *Luke 6. iohn 13.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he bee as his master, and the seruant as his lord: If they haue called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his houshold?

26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuealed; and hid, that shall not be knowen. *Mar. 4. luke 8. 1 and 12.

27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speake yee in light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach yee vpon the house tops. * Luke 1 || It is in lue half farthing, the origin as being th tenth part the Roma peny.

28 * And feare not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him which is able to destroy both soule and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrowes sold for a || farthing? And one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father?

30 * But the very haires of your head are all numbred. *2. Sam. 1 11. acts 2 34.

31 Feare yee not therefore, yee are of more value then many sparrowes.

ke 12.8. 32 *Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

k.8.38. 33 *But whosoeuer shall denie mee before men, him
9.26. will I also denie before my Father which is heauen.

.2.12. 34 *Thinke not that I am come to send peace on
12.51. earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

h.7.6. 35 For I am come to set a man at variance *against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall bee they of his owne household.

.14.26. 37 *He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loueth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

a.16.24 38 *And hee that taketh not his crosse, and followeth
9.23. after me, is not worthy of me.

ke 8.34. 39 *He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and hee that
n.12.25 loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

k.10.16. 40 ¶ *He that receiueth you, receiueth mee: and hee
13.20. that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me.

41 He that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receiue a Prophets reward: and he that receiueth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receiue a righteous mans reward.

rk.9.41. 42 *And whosoeuer shall giue to drinke vnto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water onely in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

1 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimonie concerning Iohn.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had made an end of commaunding his twelue Disciples, hee departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

k.7.18. 2 *Now when Iohn had heard in the prison the
workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said vnto him, Art thou he that should come, or doe we looke for another?

4 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Goe and shew Iohn againe those things which ye doe heare and see.

i.35.6. 5 *The blind receiue their sight, and the lame walke,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare, the dead are
ai.61.1. raised vp, and * the poore haue the Gospel preached to them.

6 And

6 And blessed is hee, whosoever shall not bee offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say vnto the multitudes concerning Iohn, What went yee out into the wilderness to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? Behold, they that weare soft clothing, are in Kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

10 For this is hee of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. *Mala. 3.

11 Verily I say vnto you, Among them that are borne of women, there hath not risen a greater then Iohn the Baptist: notwithstanding, hee that is least in the Kingdome of heaven, is greater then hee.

12 * And from the dayes of Iohn the Baptist, vntill now, the Kingdome of heaven || suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. *Luke 16. || Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men

13 For all the Prophets, and the Law prophesied vntill Iohn.

14 And if ye will receiue it, this is * Elias which was for to come. *Mala. 4.

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto children sitting in the markets, & calling vnto their fellowes, *Luke 7.

17 And saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn neither came eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuill.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners: but wisedome is iustified of her children.

20 ¶ * Then began hee to vpbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty workes were done, because they repented not. *Luke 10.

21 Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty workes which were done in you, had beene done in Tyre and Sidon, they would haue repented long agoe in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for

Tyre and Sidon at the day of Iudgement, then for you.
23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted vnto heauen, shalt bee brought downe to hell: For if the mighty workes which haue beene done in thee, had beene done in Sodome, it would haue remayned vntill this day.
24 But I say vnto you, that it shall bee more tolerable for the land of Sodome, in the day of Iudgement, then for thee.
Luke 10.21 25 ¶ * At that time Iesus answered, & said, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes.
26 Euen so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.
Iohn 3.35. 27 * All things are deliuered vnto me of my Father: Iohn 6.46. and no man knoweth the Sonne but the Father: * neither knoweth any man the Father, saue the Sonne, and he to whomsoeuer the Sonne will reueale him.
28 ¶ Come vnto me all ye that labour, and are heauy laden, and I will giue you rest.
29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learne of mee, for I Ezek. 6.16. am meeke and lowly in heart, * and ye shall finde rest vnto your soules.
Iohn 5.3. 30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

1 The Disciples plucke the eares of corne on the Sabbath.
31 Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.

Mar. 2.23. Luke 6.1. AT that time * Iesus went on the Sabbath day thorow the corne, and his Disciples were an hungred, Luke 23.25. and began to plucke the eares of corne, and to eate.
2 But when the Pharises saw it, they sayd vnto him, Behold, thy Disciples doe that which is not lawful to doe vpon the Sabbath day.
Num. 21.6 3 But hee said vnto them, Haue yee not read * what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him,
4 How hee entred into the house of God, and did eate the Shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, Leuit. 29.33. 1. Sam. 21.6. neither for them which were with him, * but onely for the Priests?
Deut. 24.9. 5 Or haue yee not read in the * Law, how that on the Num. 28.9. Sabbath dayes, the Priests in the Temple prophane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse?
6 But I say vnto you, that in this place is one greater then the Temple. Mat. 6.7.
Hos. 6.9. 13. 7 But if yee had knowen what this meaneth, * I will

will haue mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not haue condemned the guiltlesse.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord euen of the Sabbath day.

9 *And when he was departed thence, hee went into their Synagogue. *Marke 3. luke 6.6.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And hee sayd vnto them, What man shall there bee among you, that shall haue one sheepe, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will hee not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheepe? Wherefore it is lawful to doe wel on the Sabbath dayes.

13 Then sayth hee to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and ‖ held a councell against him, how they might destroy him. ‖Or, took counsell.

15 But when Iesus knew it, hee withdrew himselfe from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him knowen:

17 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

18 *Behold, my seruant whom I haue chosen, my beloued in whom my soule is well pleased: I will put my Spirit vpon him, and hee shall shew iudgement to the Gentiles. *Isai 42.

19 Hee shall not striue, nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voyce in the streetes.

20 A bruised reede shall hee not breake, and smoaking flaxe shall he not quench, till he send forth iudgement vnto victory.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 ¶ *Then was brought vnto him one possessed with a deuill, blinde and dumbe: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumbe both spake and saw. *Luke 11.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the sonne of Dauid?

24 *But when the Pharises heard it, they said, This fellow doeth not cast out deuils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the deuils. *Chap. 9.

25 And

25 And Iesus knew their thoughts, and sayd vnto them, Every kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and every citie, or house diuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, hee is diuided against himselfe; how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your Iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he first binde the strong man, and then he will spoile his house.

30 He that is not with mee, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

.3.28. 31 ¶ Wherefore I say vnto you, * All manner of sinne
12 10. and blasphemie shall bee forgiuen vnto men: but the blas-
n 5.16. phemie against the holy Ghost, shall not be forgiuen vnto men,

32 And whosoeuer speaketh a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not bee forgiuen him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good: or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is knowen by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can yee being euill,
e 6.45. speake good things? * For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure, bringeth foorth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, That every idle word that men shall speake, they shall giue accompt thereof in the day of Iudgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

p 16.1. 38 ¶ * Then certaine of the Scribes, and of the Pha-
11.29- risees answered, saying, Master, wee would see a signe
.1.22. from thee.

39 But he answered, and said to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, & there shal no signe be giuen to it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

ah.1.17 40 * For as Ionas was three dayes and three nights in the Whales belly: so shall the Sonne of man bee three

dayes

dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.
41 The men of Ninene shall rise in Iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it, * because they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is heere. *Ionah 3.
42 * The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the Iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for shee came from the vttermost parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is heere. *1.Kin.10
43 * When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, & findeth none. *Luke 11.
44 Then hee sayeth, I will returne into mine house from whence I came out: And when hee is come, hee findeth it empte, swept, and garnished.
45 Then goeth hee, and taketh with himselfe seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell there: * And the last state of that man is worse then the first. Euen so shall it bee also vnto this wicked generation. *Hebr.6. and 10. 2.pet.2.
46 ¶ While hee yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him. *Mar.3. luke 8.
47 Then one said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee.
48 But he answered and said vnto him that told him, Who is my mother? And who are my brethren?
49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his Disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren.
50 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of my Father which is in heauen, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

3 Of the sower and the seede. 24 Diuers other parables.
34 Why Christ spake in parables.

THe same day went Iesus out of the house, * and sate by the sea side. *Mark.
2 And great multitudes were gathered together vnto him, so that he went into a ship, and sate, and the whole multitude stood on the shore:
3 And hee spake many things vnto them in parables, saying, * Behold, a sower went forth to sow. *Luke 8.
4 And when hee sowed, some seedes fell by the wayes side, and the fowles came, and deuoured them vp.
5 Some fell vpon stony places, where they had not much

much earth: and forthwith they sprung vp, because they had no deepenesse of earth.

6 And when the Sunne was vp, they were scorched, and because they had not roote, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes: and the thornes sprung vp, and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixtie fold, some thirtie folde.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And the Disciples came, and sayd vnto him, Why speakest thou vnto them in parables?

11 He answered, and said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know the mysteries of the Kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

ap.25. 12 * For whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen, and he shall haue more abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that he hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they heare not, neither doe they vnderstand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esayas, which saith, * By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue.

.6.9. 84.12. 8.10. 12.40. 28.26. 11.8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they haue closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

e 10.24 17 For verily I say vnto you, * That many Prophets and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them.

18 ¶ Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: this is he which receiued seede by the way side.

20 But he that receiued the seede into stony places, the same is hee that heareth the word, and anon with ioy receiueth it:

21 Yet hath he not roote in himselfe, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that receiued seed among the thornes, is he that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choake the word, and hee becommeth vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued the seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundreth fold, some sixty, some thirtie.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying: The kingdome of heauen is likened vnto a man which sowed good seed in his field.

25 But while men slept, his enemie came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the householder came, and said vnto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, An enemie hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we goe and gather them vp?

29 But hee sayd, Nay: lest while yee gather vp the tares ye root vp also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together vntill the harueſt: and in the time of harueſt, I will say to the reapers, Gather yee together first the tares, and binde them in bundles to burne them: but gather the wheat into my harne.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying, *The kingdome of heauen is like to a graine of mustard seed, which a man tooke and sowed in his field,

32 Which in deed is the least of all seeds: but when it is growne, it is the greatest among herbes, and becommeth a tree: so that the birdes of the ayre come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 *Another parable spake hee vnto them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three † measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

34 *All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake hee not vnto them,

35 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will vtter things which haue beene kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, and went into

*Mark luke

*Luk.

† The the Gr a mea contain bout a and a wantin more t pint.

* Mar.

* Psal.

into the house: and his Disciples came vnto him, saying: Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, He that soweth the good seede, is the sonne of man.

38 The field is the world. The good seed are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

13.13. 39 The enemie that sowed them, is the deuill. * The
14.15. harueſt is the end of the world. And the reapers are the Angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire, so shall it be in the end of the world.

41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his Angels, scan- and they shall gather out of his kingdome all || things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shal be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

13.43. 43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the Kingdom of their Father: who hath eares to heare let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe, the Kingdome of heauen is like vnto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found he hideth, and for ioy thereof, goeth and selleth all that hee hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Againe the Kingdome of heauen is like vnto a marchant man seeking goodly pearles:

46 Who when hee had found one pearle of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a net that was cast into the Sea, and gathered of every kinde,

48 Which when it was full they drew to the shore, and sate downe, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it bee in the end of the world: the Angels shall come forth, and seuer the wicked from among the iust.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Iesus sayth vnto them, Haue ye vnderstood all these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said hee vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is instructed vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto a man which is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 * And

54 *And when hee was come into his owne countrey, he taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and sayd, Whence hath this man this wisedome, and these mightie workes? *Marke luke 4.

55 *Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren Iames, and Ioses, and Simon, and Iudas? *Iohn 6.

56 And his sisters, are they not all with vs? whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus sayd vnto them, *A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne countrey, and in his owne house. *Mark. 6. luke 4. iohn 4.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their vnbelieke.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Herods opinion of Christ. 10 Iohn Baptist beheaded. 17 Fiue loaues and two fishes.

AT that time *Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus. *Mar. 6. luke 9.

2 And said to his seruants, This is Iohn the Baptist, hee is risen from the dead, and therefore mightie workes, ‖ doe shew forth themselues in him. ‖ Or, are wrought him.

3 ¶ *For Herode had layd holde on Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife. *Luke 3. *Leuit. 18. 16. *Cha. 1.

4 For Iohn said vnto him, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.

5 And when he would haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, *because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Giue me heere Iohn Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: neuertheleſſe, for the oaths sake, and them that sate with him at meat, hee commanded it to be giuen her.

10 And he sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and giuen to the Damosell: and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and tooke vp the bodie, and buried it, and went and told Iesus.

13 ¶ *And when Iesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship, into a desart place apart: and when the people had *Mark. luke 9.

had heard thereof, they followed him on foot, out of the
cities.
14 And Iesus went forth, and saw a great multitude,
and was moued with compassion toward them, and he
healed their sicke.
Mar 6.5. 15 ¶ *And when it was euening, his disciples came
Luke 6.35. to him, saying, This is a desart place, and the time is now
past: send the multitude away, that they may goe into the
villages and buy themselues victuals.
16 But Iesus said vnto them, They need not depart,
giue ye them to eate.
17 And they said vnto him, Wee haue heere but fiue
loaues, and two fishes.
18 He said, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to sit downe on
the grasse, and tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes,
and looking vp to heauen; he blessed and brake, and gaue
the loaues to his disciples, and the disciples to the multi-
tude.
20 And they did all eat and were filled: and they tooke
vp of the fragments that remained twelue baskets full.
21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand
men, besides women and children.
22 ¶ And straightway Iesus constrained his disciples
to get into a shippe, and to goe before him vnto the other
side, while he sent the multitudes away.
Luke 6.46. 23 *And when hee had sent the multitudes away, hee
Mar 6.46. went vp into a mountaine apart to pray: * and when the
euening was come, hee was there alone.
24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed
with waues: for the winde was contrary.
25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went
vnto them, walking on the Sea.
26 And when the Disciples saw him walking on the
Sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they
cryed out for feare.
27 But straightway, Iesus spake vnto them, saying,
Be of good cheere: It is I, be not afraid.
28 And Peter answered him, saying, Lord, if it bee
thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.
29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come
downe out of the ship, hee walked on the water to goe to
Iesus.
30 But when hee saw the winde [boisterous, hee was
afraid, and beginning to sinke, hee cryed, saying, Lord,
saue me.

31 And

31 And immediately Jesus stretched foorth his hand, and caught him, & sayd vnto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were gone ouer they came into the land of Genesaret. *Mar. 6.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought vnto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hemme of his garment: and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

1. Gods commandements, and mens traditions, 18. what defileth a man, and what not.

Then *came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were at Hierusalem, saying, *Mar. 7. 1.

2 Why doe thy Disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands, when they eat bread.

3 But he answered, and said vnto them, Why doe you also transgresse the Commaundements of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, * Honour thy father and mother: * And hee that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. *Exo. 20. deut 5. 1. * Exo. 21.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, * It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest bee profited by me, leuit. 20. 9. pro. 20. 2. Marke 7.

6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus haue ye made the Commandement of God of none effect, by your tradition. 11. 12.

7 Yee hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,

8 * This people draweth nigh vnto mee with their mouth, and honoureth mee with their lips: but their heart is farre from me. *Esa. 29. 1.

9 But in vaine doe they worship me, teaching for doctrines, the Commandements of men.

10 ¶ * And hee called the multitude, and sayd vnto them, Heare and vnderstand. * Mar. 7. 1.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth, defileth a man: but that which commeth out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said vnto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

ohn 15.2. 13 But hee answered, and sayde, * Euery plant which my heauenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp.

uk. 6. 39. 14 Let them alone: * they bee blinde leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

at. 7. 17. 15 * Then answered Peter, and said vnto him: Declare vnto vs this parable.

16 And Iesus said, Are yee also yet without vnderstanding?

17 Doe ye not yet vnderstand, that whatsoeuer entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come foorth from the heart, and they defile the man.

en 6.5. 19 * For out of the heart proceed euill thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnesse, blas-
8. 1. phemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man: But to eate with vnwashen hands, defileth not a man

ar. 7. 24. 21 ¶ * Then Iesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cryed vnto him, saying, Haue mercy on me, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dauid, my daughter is grieuously vexed with a deuill.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his Disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she cryeth after vs.

hap. 10. 6 24 But he answered, and said, * I am not sent but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Then came shee and worshipped him, saying, Lord helpe me.

26 But he answered, and said, It is not meete to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And shee said, Trueth Lord: yet the dogs eate of the crumbes which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it vnto thee, euen as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very houre.

29 * And

29 *And Iesus departed from thence, and came nigh vnto the Sea of Galilee, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there. *Mar.7.

30 * And great multitudes came vnto him, hauing with them those that were lame, blind, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them downe at Iesus feet, and he healed them: *Esay 35

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred, when they saw the dumbe to speake, the maimed to bee whole, the lame to walke, and the blinde to see, and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 ¶ * Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. *Marke

33 And his Disciples say vnto him, Whence should wee haue so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus saith vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said Seauen, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the ground.

36 And hee tooke the seuen loaues and the fishes, and gaue thanks, and brake them and gaue to his disciples and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seauen baskets full.

38 And they that did eate, were foure thousand men, besides women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and tooke shippe, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

4 The signe of Ionas. 6 The leauen of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 21 Christ foreshewth his death.

THe * Pharisees also, with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that hee would shew them a signe from heauen. *Mark.8. Luke 12.

2 Hee answered, and said vnto them, When it is euening, ye say, It will be faire weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foule weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, yee can discerne the face of the skie: but can yee not discerne the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen vnto it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas. And hee left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Take heed, and beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the Saduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, It is because we haue taken no bread.

8 Which when Iesus perceiued, he said vnto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread?

a.14.17 9 *Doe ye not yet vnderstand, neither remember the fiue loaues of the fiue thousand, and how many baskets ye tooke vp?

a.15.34 10 *Neither the seuen loaues of the foure thousand, and how many baskets ye tooke vp?

11 How is it that ye doe not vnderstand, that I spake it not vnto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the Saduces?

12 Then vnderstood they how that hee bade them not beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Saduces.

13 ¶ When Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, *Whom doe men say, that I, the Sonne of man, am?

r.8.27. e 9.18.

14 And they sayd, Some say that thou art Iohn the Baptist, some Elias, and others Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He saith vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?

hn 6.69. 16 And Simon Peter answered and sayd, *Thou art Christ the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-Iona: for flesh and bloud hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

oh 1.42. 18 And I say also vnto thee, that *thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not preuaile against it.

oh.20.23. 19 *And I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heauen, whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen.

20 Then charged hee his Disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Iesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From

21 ¶ From that time forth began Iesus to shew vnto his Disciples, how that hee must goe vnto Ierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders, and chiefe Priests, and Scribes, and bee killed, and bee rayseb againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it farre from thee, Lord: This shall not be vnto thee.

23 But hee turned, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behinde mee, Satan, thou art an offence vnto me: for thou fauourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

24 ¶ * Then said Iesus vnto his Disciples, If any man will come after mee, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me. *Cha. 10 marke 8

25 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if hee shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man giue in exchange for his soule?

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his Angels: * and then he shall reward euery man according to his workes. *Psal. 6 rom. 2. 6

28 Verily I say vnto you, * There bee some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Sonne of man comming in his kingdome. * Marke luke 9. 3

CHAP. XVII.

2 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 Hee healeth the lunatike, 22 foretelleth his owne passion, 24 payeth tribute.

AND * after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high mountaine apart. *Mark luke 9. 2

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his rayment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said vnto Iesus, Lord, it is good for vs to be heere. If thou wilt, let vs make here three Tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 * While hee yet spake, behold, a bright cloude ouershadowed them: and behold, a voyce out of the cloude, which sayd, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased, heare ye him. *2. Pet. 1

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their
face, and were sore afraid.
7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise,
and be not afraid.
8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they saw no
man, saue Jesus onely.
9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, Je-
sus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, vn-
till the Sonne of man be risen againe from the dead.
.11.14. 10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then
ke 9.11. say the Scribes that Elias must first come?
11 And Jesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Elias
truely shall first come, and restore all things.
12 But I say vnto you, That Elias is come already,
and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatso-
euer they listed: Likewise also shall the Sonne of man
suffer of them.
13 Then the disciples vnderstood that hee spake vnto
them of John the Baptist.
ke 9.17 14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude,
9.38. there came to him a certaine man, kneeling down to him,
and saying,
15 Lord, haue mercy on my sonne, for hee is lunaticke,
and sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into the fire, and
oft into the water.
16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could
not cure him.
17 Then Jesus answered, and sayd, O faithlesse and
peruerse generation, how long shall I be with you? how
long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.
18 And Jesus rebuked the deuill, and he departed out
of him: and the childe was cured from that very houre.
19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and sayd,
Why could not we cast him out?
20 And Jesus sayd vnto them, Because of your vn-
e 17.6. believe: for verily I say vnto you, * If ye haue faith as a
graine of mustard seede, ye shall say vnto this mountaine,
Remoone hence to yonder place: and it shall remoone,
and nothing shall be vnpossible vnto you.
21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out but by prayer
and fasting.
.20.17. 22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus sayd
e 9.31. vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be betrayed into the
9.44. hands of men.
23 And they shall kill him, and the third day hee shall
be raised againe: And they were exceeding sorie.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued || tribute money, came to Peter, and sayd, Doeth not your master pay tribute?

25 He sayth, Yes. And when hee was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom doe the Kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their owne children, or of strangers?

26 Peter sayth vnto him, Of strangers. Iesus saith vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest wee should offend them, goe thou to the Sea, and cast an hooke, and take vp the fish that first commeth vp: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde || a piece of money: that take and giue it vnto them for me, and thee.

|| Called original drachm ing in fifteene Or. a It is ha ounce ucer, in two sh fixe p after fi lings t ounce.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences 21 and forgiuing one another.

AT * the same time came the Disciples vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the Kingdome of heauen?

*Mar. luke 9

2 And Iesus called a little childe vnto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And sayd, Verily I say vnto you, * except yee bee conuerted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

*Cha. 1.cor.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is greatest in the Kingdome of heauen.

5 And whoso shall receiue one such little childe in my Name, receiueth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleeue in mee, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the Sea.

*Mar luke

7 ¶ Woe vnto the world because of offences: for it must needes bee that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foote offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then hauing two hands or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire.

*Cha mark

9 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then hauing two eyes, to bee cast into hell fire.

10 Take heede that yee despise not one of these little
ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their Angels doe
alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen.
11 * For the Sonne of man is come to saue that which
was lost.
12 ¶ How think ye? if a man haue an hundred sheepe,
and one of them bee gone astray, doeth hee not leaue the
ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountaines, and seek-
eth that which is gone astray.
13 And if so be that he finde it, Verily I say vnto you,
hee reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninety and
nine which went not astray.
14 Euen so it is not the will of your Father which is
in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish.
15 ¶ Moreouer, * if thy brother shal trespasse against
thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him
alone: if hee shall heare thee, thou hast gained thy bro-
ther:
16 But if hee will not heare thee, then take with thee
one or two more, that in the * mouth of two or three wit-
nesses, euery word may bee established.
17 And if hee shall neglect to heare them, tell it vn-
to the Church: But if hee neglect to heare the Church,
let him bee vnto thee as an * heathen man, and a Pub-
licane.
18 Verily I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye shall binde
on earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer ye shall
loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen.
19 Againe I say vnto you, That if two of you shall a-
gree on earth as touching any thing that they shall aske,
it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heauen.
20 For where two or three are gathered together in
my Name, there am I in the middes of them.
21 ¶ Then came Peter vnto him, and said, Lord, how
oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I forgiue him?
* till seuen times?
22 Iesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, Vntill
seuen times: but, Vntill seuenty times seuen.
23 ¶ Therefore is the Kingdome of heauen likened
vnto a certaine King, which would take account of his
seruants.
24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought
vnto him, which ought him ten thousand || talents.
25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord com-
manded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all
that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and ‖ worshipped him, saying, Lord, haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

‖ Or, besought him.

27 Then the Lord of that seruant was moued with compassion, and loosed him, and forgaue him the debt.

28 But the same seruant went out, and found one of his fellow seruants, which ought him an hundred ‖ pence, and hee laid hands on him, and tooke him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

‖ The Romane peny is the eight part of an ounce, which after 5 shillings the ounce, is 7. d. ob.

29 And his fellow-seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-seruants saw what was done, they were very sorie, and came, and told vnto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that hee had called him, said vnto him, O thou wicked seruant, I forgaue thee all that debt because thou desiredst me.

33 Shouldest not thou also haue had compassion on thy fellow seruant, even as I had pitie on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewise shall my heauenly Father doe also vnto you, if yee from your hearts forgiue not euery one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX

2 Christ healeth the sicke. 3 and 7 Touching diuorcement. 16 How to attaine eternall life.

AND it came to passe, * that when Iesus had finished these sayings, hee departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Iudea, beyond Iordan:

* Mar. 10. 1.

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came vnto him, tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for euery cause?

4 And he answered and said vnto them, Haue ye not read * that hee which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

* Gen. 1. 27.

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shal cleaue to his wife: and * they twaine shall be one flesh.

* Gen. 2. 24. * Ephes. 5. 31. * 1. Cor. 6. 16.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh.

What

What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man
put asunder.

Deut.24.1. 7 They say vnto him, * Why did Moses then com-
maund to giue a writing of diuorcement, and to put her
away?

8 He sayth vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse
of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wiues: but
from the beginning it was not so.

Mat.5.32. 9 * And I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall put away
Mark.10.11. his wife, except it bee for fornication, and shall marry
Luke 16.18. another, committeth adulterie: and whoso marrieth her
1 Cor.7.11. which is put away, doeth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say vnto him, If the case of the man
be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But hee sayd vnto them, All men cannot receiue
this saying, saue they to whom it is giuen.

12 For there are some Eunuches, which were so borne
from their mothers wombe: and there are some Eunu-
ches, which were made Eunuches of men: and there bee
Eunuches, which haue made themselues Eunuches for
the Kingdome of heauens sake. He that is able to receiue
it, let him receiue it.

Mar.10.13. 13 ¶ * Then were there brought vnto him little chil-
Luke 18.15. dren, that hee should put his hands on them, and pray:
and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus sayd, Suffer little children, and forbid
them not to come vnto me: for of such is the Kingdome
of heauen.

15 And he laid his hands on them, & departed thence.

Mar.10.17 16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good
Luke 18.18. Master, what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue
eternall life?

17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good?
there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt
enter into life, keepe the Commandements.

Exod.20.23 18 Hee saith vnto him, Which? Iesus sayd, * Thou
shalt doe no murther, Thou shalt not commit adultery,
Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.

19 Honour thy father & thy mother: and, Thou shalt
loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man saith vnto him, All these things
haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt bee perfect, go
and sell that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou
shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he
went

went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then sayd Iesus vnto his disciples, Verily I say vnto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a cammell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saued?

26 But Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Behold, wee haue forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we haue therefore? *Mar. 10. luke 18.

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, That yee which haue followed mee in the regeneration, when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his glorie, * yee also shall sit vpon twelue thrones, iudging the twelue tribes of Israel. *Luke 12.

29 And euery one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, shall receiue an hundred fold, and shall inherite euerlasting life.

30 * But many that are first, shall bee last, and the last shall be first. *Cha. 20. mar. 10. luke 13.

CHAP XX.

1 Of the labourers in the Vineyard. 20 Christ teacheth his Disciples to be lowly.

FOr the Kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when hee had agreed with the labourers for a ‖ peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

‖ The Romane peny the eight p of an ounce which after 5. shillings the ounce, i seuen pence halfepeny.

3 And hee went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And sayd vnto them, Goe ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you. And they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleuenth houre hee went out, and found others standing idle, and sayth vnto them, Why stand ye heere all the day idle?

7 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hired

vs. He saith vnto them, Goe ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 So when Euen was come, the lord of the vineyard saith vnto his steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning from the last vnto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleuenth houre, they receiued euery man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should haue receiued more, and they likewise receiued euery man a peny.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the goodman of the house,

12 Saying, These last ‖ haue wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden, and heate of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I doe thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with mee for a peny?

14 Take that thine is, and goe thy way, I will giue vnto this last, euen as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for mee to doe what I will with mine owne? Is thine eye euill, because I am good?

16 * So the last shall bee first, and the first last: for many be called, but fewe chosen.

17 ¶ * And Iesus going vp to Hierusalem, tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be betrayed vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

19 * And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles to mocke, and to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day hee shall rise againe.

20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And he said vnto her, What wilt thou? She saith vnto him, Graunt, that these my two sonnes may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy Kingdome.

22 But Iesus answered, and said, Ye know not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say vnto him, We are able.

23 And he saith vnto them, Ye shall drinke indeede of my cup, and bee baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left,

‖ haue wrought one houre only.

a. 19. 30.

r. 10. 32. 18. 31.

m 18. 32

r 10. 35.

left, is not mine to giue: but it shall be giuen to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moued with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd, *Yee know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie vpon them. *Luk. 22

26 But it shall not be so among you: But whosoeuer will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoeuer will bee chiefe among you, let him be your seruant.

28 Euen as the * Sonne of man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many. *Phil. 2

29 *And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude followed him. *Mar. 10 luke 18.

30 ¶ And beholde, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed out, saying, Haue mercy on vs, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dauid.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, Haue mercy on vs, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid.

32 And Iesus stood still, and called them, and sayd, What will ye that I shall doe to you?

33 They say vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may bee opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Hierusalem on an Asse, 16 and casteth out the buyers and sellers in the Temple.

AND *when they drew nigh vnto Hierusalem, and were come to Bethpage, vnto the mount of Olives then sent Iesus two disciples, *Mar. 1 luke 19

2 Saying, vnto them, Goe into the village ouer against you, and straightway ye shall find an asse tyed, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, ye shal say, The Lord hath need of them, & straight way he wil send them.

4 All this was done, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 *Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an asse, and a colt, the foale of an Asse. *Esay. 6 zach 9. iohn 1

6 *And

rk.11.2. 6 *And the Disciples went, and did as Iesus commanded them,

7 And brought the Asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid: Blessed is hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the Highest.

r.11.15. 10 * And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the
19.45. citie was moued, saying, Who is this?
12.13.

11 And the multitude sayd, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee,

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that solde, and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold doues,

y 56.7. 13 And said vnto them, It is written, * My house
.7.11. shall be called the house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a
11.17. denne of theeues.
1946.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, & the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid they were sore displeased,

16 And sayd vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus saith vnto them, Yea, haue yee neuer read,
.8.2. * Out of the mouthes of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 ¶ And hee left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning, as he returned into the citie, he hungered:

rk.11.13 19 * And when he saw a figtree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaues onely, and said vnto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforth for euer. And presently the figtree withered away?

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figtree withered away?

21 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, If yee haue faith and doubt not, yee shall not onely doe this which is done to the figtree, but also if yee shall say vnto this mountaine, Bee thou remooued,

and

and be thou cast into the Sea, it shall be done.
22 And all things whatsoever ye shall aske in prayer, beleeuing ye shall receiue.
23 ¶ * And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests & the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching, and sayd, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie? *Mar. 11. 2 luke 20. 1.
24 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, I also will aske you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.
25 The baptisme of Iohn, Whence was it? from heauen, or of men? and they reasoned with themselues, saying, If wee shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?
26 But if we shall say, Of men, wee feare the people, * for all hold Iohn as a Prophet. * Chap. 14.
27 And they answered Iesus, and sayd, Wee cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I doe these things.
28 ¶ But what thinke you? A certaine man had two sonnes, and hee came to the first, and sayd, Sonne, goe worke to day in my Vineyard.
29 He answered, and said, I will not; but afterward he repented, and went.
30 And hee came to the second, and said likewise: and he answered, and said, I goe sir, and went not.
31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? They say vnto him, The first. Iesus saith vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots goe into the kingdome of God before you.
32 * For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him. And yee when yee had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleeue him. *Chap. 3.
33 ¶ Heare another parable. There was a certaine householder, * which planted a Vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepresse in it, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey. *Esay 5. 1. iere 2. 21. marke 12 luke 20. 9
34 And when the time of the fruit drew neere, hee sent his seruants to the husbandmen, that they might receiue the fruites of it.
35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.
36 Againe hee sent other seruants, more then the first, and they did vnto them likewise.

37 But

37 But last of all he sent vnto them his sonne, saying They will reuerence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said, among themselues, * This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and let vs seize on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, & cast him out of the Vineyard, and slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the Vineyard commeth, what will he doe vnto those husbandmen?

41 They say vnto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his Vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Iesus saith vnto them, * Did ye neuer reade in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner: This is the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, The kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and giuen to a nation bringing foorth the fruits thereof.

44 And * whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, shall bee broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chiefe Priestes and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they tooke him for a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The marriage of the Kings sonne. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 12 The wedding garment.

AND Iesus answered, * and spake vnto them againe by parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine king, which made a marriage for his sonne,

3 And sent foorth his seruants to call them that were bidden to the wedding and they would not come.

4 Againe, hee sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farme, and another to his merchandize:

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants and intreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the King heard thereof, hee was wroth, and

Mat. 26 3
Luke 11.53.
Psal 118.
Ies 54.11.
Rom. 9.33.
Pet 2.7.
28.14.
Luke 14.16
Ml. 19.9.

and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then saith he to his seruants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Goe ye therefore into the high wayes, and as many as ye shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the high wayes, & gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with ghests.

11 ¶ And when the King came in to see the ghests he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he saith vnto him, Friend, How camest thou in hither, not hauing a wedding garment? And he was speachlesse.

13 Then said the King vnto his seruants, Binde him hand and foote, and take him away, and cast him into vtter darknesse, there shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few are chosen. *Cha. 20.

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharisees, and tooke counsell, how they might entangle him in his talke. *Mar. 12. luke 20. 2

16 And they sent out vnto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, wee know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in trueth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednesse, and sayde, Why tempt ye me ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought vnto him a || peny. || In value seuen pence halfe peny, chap. 20. 2

20 And hee saith vnto them, whose is this image and || superscription? ||Or, inscription.

21 They sayd vnto him, Cesars. Then saith he vnto them, * Render therefore vnto Cesar, the things that are Cesars: and vnto God the things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard these words, they marueiled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ * The same day came to him the Sadducees, *which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, *Rom. 13.

24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, if any man die, hauing no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother. *Mar. 12. luke 20. 2 *Actes 23. *Deut. 25.

25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the

first when shee had married a wife, deceased, and hauing no issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of all the woman dyed also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seauen? for they all had her.

29 Iesus answered and said vnto them, Ye do erre, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as ♄ angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not read that which was spoken vnto you by God, saying,

Exod.3.6. 32 *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

Mar.12.28. 34 ¶ * But when the Pharisees had heard that hee had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them which was a Lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, saying,

36 Master, which is the great Commandement in the Law.

Deut.6.5. Luke 10.27. 37 Iesus said vnto him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commandement.

Leu.19.18. 39 And the second is like vnto it, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On these two Commandements hang all the Law and the Prophets.

Mar.12.35 Luke 20.41. 41 ¶ * While the Pharisees were gathered together, Iesus asked them,

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose sonne is he? They say vnto him, The sonne of Dauid.

43 Hee saith vnto them, How then doth Dauid in spirit call him, Lord, saying,

Psal.110.1. 44 The Lord said vnto my Lord, * Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole?

45 If Dauid then call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And no man was able to answere him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) aske him any moe questions.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 The Scribes and Pharisees good doctrine, but euill example of life. 34 The destruction of Ierusalem.

Then spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his Disciples.

2 Saying, The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses seat:

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe, but doe not yee after their workes: for they say, and doe not.

4 *For they binde heauy burdens and grieuous to be borne, & lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with one of their fingers. *Luk. 11

5 But all their workes they doe, for to be seen of men: *they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, *Num. 15. 38, deut. 12.

6 *And loue the vppermost roomes at feasts, and the chiefe seats in the Synagogues, *Mar. 12. luke 11.

7 And greetings in the markets, and to bee called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 *But bee not ye called Rabbi, for one is your Master, euen Christ, and all ye are brethren. *Iames 3.

9 *And call no man your Father vpon the earth: for *one is your Father which is in heauen. *Mal. 1.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, euen Christ. *Luk. 14. 18. 14.

11 But hee that is greatest among you shall bee your seruant. *Luk. 11.

12 *And whosoeuer shall exalt himselfe, shall bee abased: and he that shall humble himselfe, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But *woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites; for yee shut vp the kingdome of heauen against men: For yee neither goe in your selues, neither suffer ye them that are entering to goe in. *Mar. 12. luke 20.

14 *Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make a long prayer: therefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation.

15 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for ye compasse sea and land to make one Proselite, and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell then your selues.

16 Woe vnto you, ye blinde guides, which say, whosoeuer shall sweare by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer shall sweare by the gold of the Temple, hee is a debtor.

17 Yee fooles, and blinde: for whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?
18 And whosoeuer shall sweare by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gift that is vpon it, he is || guilty.
19 Yee fooles and blinde: for whether is greater the gift, or the Altar that sanctifieth the gift?
20 Who so therefore shall sweare by the Altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.
21 And who so shall sweare by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
22 And hee that shall sweare by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.
23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites *for ye pay tythe of mynt, and annise, and cummine, and haue omitted the weightier matters of the Law, iudgement, mercy and faith: these ought ye to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.
24 Yee blinde guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a camell.
25 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: *for yee make cleane the outside of the cuppe, and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion, and excesse.
26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also.
27 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for ye are like vnto whited sepulchres, which indeede appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all vncleannesse.
28 Euen so, yee also outwardly appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.
29 Wo vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,
30 And say, If wee had beene in the dayes of our fathers, wee would not haue beene partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.
31 Wherefore ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that killed the Prophets.
32 Fill ye vp then the measure of your fathers.
33 Ye serpents, yee generation of vipers, How can yee escape the damnation of hell?
34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, and wise men and Scribes, and some of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and some of them shall yee scourge in your Synagogues,

a debtor, bound.

k. 11. 42

k. 11. 39.

Synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie:

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood shed vpon the earth, * from the blood of righteous Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias, sonne of Barachias, whom ye slew betweene the Temple and the Altar. *Gen. 4.

36 Verely I say vnto you, All these things shall come vpon this generation.

37 * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that killest the Prophets, * and stonest them which are sent vnto thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together euen as a hen gatherethy her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not. *Luk. 13. * 2. Chro. 21. * 2. esd. 1.

38 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate.

39 For I say vnto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 The destruction of the Temple. 29 Of Christs comming to iudgement.

AND Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his disciples came to him, for to shew him the buildings of the Temple. *Mark. 1 luke 21. 5

2 And Iesus sayd vnto them, See yee not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, * There shall not be left here one stone vpon another, that shall not bee throwen downe. *Luk. 19.

3 ¶ And as hee sate vpon the mount of Olliues, the Disciples came vnto him priuately, saying, tell vs when these things shall be? and what shall bee the signe of thy comming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

6 And yee shall heare of warres, and rumors of warres: See that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall bee faminee, and pestilences, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrowes.

9 * Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and yee shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake. *Chap. 17. luke 21.

10 And then shall many bee offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. iohn 16.

And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shall abound, the loue of many shall waxe cold.

13 But he that shal endure vnto the end, the same shal be saued.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse vnto all nations, and then shall the end come.

ar. 13, 14. 15 *When yee therefore shall see the abhomination of
n. 9. 27. desolation, spoken of by *Daniel the Prophet, stand in the holy place, (who so readeth let him vnderstand.)

16 Then let them that be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him that is in the field, returne backe to take his clothes.

19 And woe vnto them that are with childe, and to them that give sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray yee that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

21 For then shall bee great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor euer shall be.

22 And except those dayes should bee shortned, there should no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake, those dayes shall be shortned.

ar. 13. 21. 23 * Then if any man shall say vnto you, Loe, heere is
ke 27. 23. Christ, or there: beleeue it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shal shew great signes and wonders: insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue told you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Behold, he is in the desert, goe not forth: Behold, hee is in the secret chambers, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightening commeth out of the East, and shineth euen vnto the West: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

uk. 17. 37 28 * For wherefoeuer the carcase is, there will the
ar. 13. 24 Eagles be gathered together.

ke 21. 25. 29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those dales,
y 13. 10. * shall the Sonne bee darkened, and the Moone shall not
l. 2. 31. give her light, and the Starres shall fall from heauen,
k. 32. 7. and the powers of the heauen shall be shaken.

30 And

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the Tribes of the earth mourne, * and they shall see the Sonne of man comming in the clouds of heauen, with power and great glory.

31 * And he shal send his Angels with ‖ a great sound of a Trumpet, and they shall gather together his Elect from the foure windes, from one ende of heauen to the other.

32 Now learne a parable of the fig-tree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, yee know that Summer is nigh:

33 So likewise yee, when yee shall see all these things, know that it is neere, euen at the doores.

34 Verily I say vnto you, This generation shall not passe, till all these things bee fulfilled.

35 * Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my word shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man bee.

38 * For as in the dayes that were before the Flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giuing in marriage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knew not vntill the Flood came, and tooke them all away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man bee.

40 * Then shall two bee in the field, the one shall bee taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ * Watch therefore, for yee know not what houre your Lord doeth come.

43 * But know this, that if the goodman of the house had knowen in what watch the thiefe would come, hee would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to bee broken vp.

44 Therefore bee yee also ready: for in such an houre as yee thinke not, the Sonne of man commeth.

45 * Who then is a faithfull and wise seruant, whom his Lord hath made ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them meate in due season?

46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when hee commeth, shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say vnto you, that he shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.

* Reuel. 1

* 1. Cor. 15. 1. Th. 4. 16.

‖ Or, with Trumpet a great v

* Mar. 13

* Gene. luke 17.

* Luk. 1

* Mar. 1

* Luk. 1 1. Thess. reuel. 1

* Luk. 1

48 But and if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming,
49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-seruants, and to eate and drinke with the drunken:
50 The Lord of that seruant shall come in a day when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that hee is not ware off:
cut him 51 And shall ‖ cut him asunder, and appoynt him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins, 14 and of the talents.
31 The last iudgement described.

THen shall the Kingdome of heauen bee likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meete the bridegrome.
2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue were foolish.
3 They that were foolish tooke their lampes, and tooke no oyle with them:
4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.
5 While the bridegrome tarried, they all slumbred and slept.
6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth, goe ye out to meete him.
7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes.
8 And the foolish said vnto the wise, Giue vs of your
going oyle, for our lampes are ‖ gone out.
9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there bee not enough for vs and you, but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.
10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the doore was shut.
11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.
12 But he answered, and said, Verily I say vnto you,
24.42 I know you not.
.13.33. 13 *Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day, nor
:19.12 the houre, wherein the Sonne of man commeth.
alent is 14 ¶ *For the kingdome of heauen is as a man trauai-
pound, ling into a farre countrey, who called his owne seruants,
llings, and deliuered vnto them his goods.
18.24. 15 And to one hee gaue fiue ‖ talents, to another two,
and

and to another one, to euery man according to his seuerall ability, and straightway tooke his iourney.

16 Then hee that had receiued the fiue talents; went and traded with the same, and made them other fiue talents.

17 And likewise he that had receiued two, he also gained other two.

18 But hee that had receiued one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those seruants commeth, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so hee that had receiued fiue talents, came and brought other fiue talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents, behold, I haue gained besides them, fiue talents more.

21 His lord said vnto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull seruant, thou hast beene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

22 Hee also that had receiued two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents, behold, I haue gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull seruant, thou hast beene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

24 Then hee which had receiued the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sowen, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: loe, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered, and said vnto him, Thou wicked and slouthfull seruant, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, & gather where I haue not strawed;

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming, I should haue receiued mine owne with vsury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him that hath ten talents.

29 * For vnto euery one that hath, shall be giuen, and hee shall haue abundance: but from him that hath not, shal be taken away, euen that which he hath. *Cha 13. marke 4. luke 8.18

30 And cast yee that vnprofitable seruant into outer darkenesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Sonne of man shall come in his glory, and

and all the holy Angels with him, then shall hee sit vpon
the throne of his glory:
32 And before him shall be gathered all Nations, and
hee shall separate them one from another, as a shepheard
diuideth his sheepe from the goates.
33 And hee shall set the sheepe on his right hand, but
the goates on the left.
34 Then shall the King say vnto them on his right
hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherite the King-
dome prepared for you from the foundation of the world:
Esay 58.7. 35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate: I
Ezek. 18.7. was thirstie, and yee gaue me drinke: I was a stranger,
and yee tooke mee in:
36 Naked, and ye clothed mee: I was sicke, and ye vi-
sited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.
37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying,
Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or
thirstie, and gaue thee drinke?
38 When saw wee thee a stranger, and tooke thee in?
or naked, and clothed thee?
39 Or when saw wee thee sicke, or in prison, and came
vnto thee?
40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them,
Verily I say vnto you, Inasmuch as yee haue done it vn-
to one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it vn-
to mee.
41 Then shall he say also vnto them on the left hand,
Gal. 6.8. * Depart from me, yee cursed, into everlasting fire prepa-
Rev. 7.23. red for the diuill and his angels.
42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate:
I was thirstie, and ye gaue me no drinke:
43 I was a stranger, and yee tooke me not in: naked,
and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and yee visited
me not.
44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord,
when saw wee thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger,
or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto
thee?
45 Then shall he answere them, saying, Verily I say
vnto you, Inasmuch as yee did it not to one of the least
of these, ye did it not to mee.
Dan. 12.2. 46 And * these shall goe away into everlasting punish-
Joh. 5.29. ment: but the righteous into life eternall.

CHAP XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 14 Iudas selleth him.
17 Christ eateth the Passeouer.

And

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples,
2 * Yee know that after two dayes is the feast of the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man is betrayed to bee crucified. *Mar. 14 luke 22. iohn 13.
3 * Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes and the Elders of the people, vnto the palace of the high Priest, who was called Caiaphas, *Ioh. 11.
4 And consulted that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.
5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there bee an vproare among the people.
6 ¶ * Now when Iesus was in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, *Mar. 14 iohn 12.
7 There came vnto him a woman, having an alabaster box of very precious oyntment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at meate.
8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?
9 For this oyntment might haue bene sold for much, and giuen to the poore.
10 When Iesus vnderstood it, hee sayd vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke vpon me.
11 * For yee haue the poore alwayes with you, but me yee haue not alwayes. *Deut. 1
12 For in that shee hath powred this oyntment on my body, shee did it for my buriall.
13 Verily I say vnto you, Wheresoeuer this Gospel shall bee preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, bee tolde for a memoriall of her,
14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests. *Mar. 1 luke 22.
15 And said vnto them, What will ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they couenanted with him for thirtie pieces of siluer.
16 And from that time hee sought opportunity to betray him.
17 ¶ * Now the first day of the feast of vnleauened bread, the Disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer? *Mar. 1 luke 22.
18 And hee said, Goe into the citie to such a man, and say vnto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keepe the Passeouer at thy house with my disciples.

19 And

19 And the Disciples did, as Iesus had appoynted them, and they made ready the Passeuer.

ar. 14, 18 20 * Now when the Euen was come, hee sate downe
e 22. 14. with the twelue.

n 13. 21. 21 And as they did eate, he said, Verily I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, and began every one of them to say vnto him, Lord, Is it I?

al. 41. 9. 23 And hee answered and said, * Hee that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The Sonne of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe vnto that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had beene good for that man, if hee had not beene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, Is it I? He said vnto him, Thou hast said.

Cor. 11. 26 ¶ And as they were eating, * Iesus tooke bread, and || blessed it, and brake it, and gaue it to the Disciples, and sayd, Take, eate: this is my body.

my greeke
s haue,
thanks.

27 And hee tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and gaue it to them, saying, Drinke ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you, I will not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the vine, vntill that day when I drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

Psalme. 30 And when they had sung an || hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives.

r. 14. 27 31 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, * All yee shall bee of-
16. 22. fended because of mee this night: for it is written. * I
h. 13. 7. will smite the Shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered abroad.

r. 14. 28 32 But after I am risen againe, * I will goe before
16. 7. you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered, and sayd vnto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I neuer bee offended.

n 13. 38 34 Iesus said vnto him, * Verily I say vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrice.

35 Peter sayd vnto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not denie thee. Likewise also sayd all the disciples.

r. 14. 32. 36 ¶ * Then commeth Iesus with them vnto a place
22. 39. called Gethsemane, and saith vnto the Disciples, Sit yee heere, while I goe and pray yonder.

37 And

37 And he taoke with him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull and very heauy.
38 Then saith hee vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowfull, euen vnto death: tarry yee heere, and watch with mee.
39 And hee went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from mee: neuertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.
40 And hee commeth vnto his disciples, and findeth them asleepe, and saith vnto Peter, What, could yee not watch with me one houre?
41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: The spirit indeed is willing but the flesh is weake.
42 He went away againe the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cuppe may not passe away from me except I drinke it, thy will be done.
43 And he came and found them asleepe againe; For their eyes were heauy.
44 And hee left them, and went away againe: and prayed the third time, saying the same words.
45 Then commeth hee to his disciples, and saith vnto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest, Beholde, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.
46 Rise, let vs bee going: behold, he is at hand that doeth betray me.
47 ¶ And *while hee yet spake, loe, Iudas one of the twelue came, and with him a great multitude with swordes and staues from the chiefe Priestes and Elders of the people. *Mar. 14. luke 22. 47 iohn 18. 3
48 Now he that betrayed him, gaue them a signe, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, the same is hee, hold him fast.
49 And foorthwith he came to Iesus, and said, Haile master, and kissed him.
50 And Iesus said vnto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layd hands on Iesus, and tooke him.
51 And beholde one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and strooke a seruant of the high Priests, and smote off his eare.
52 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Put vp againe thy sword into his place: *for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword. *Gen. 9. 6 reuel. 13.
53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father,

ther, and he shall presently giue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

ay. 53. 10 54 But how then shal the Scriptures be fulfilled* that thus it must be?

55 In that same houre sayd Iesus to the multitudes, Are yee come out as against a thiefe with swordes and staues for to take me? I sate dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and ye layd no hands on me:

am. 4. 20. 56 But all this was done, that the * Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the Disciples forsooke him, and fled:

ar. 14. 53 57 ¶ *And they that had laid hold on Iesus, led him
ke 22. 54. away to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes
n 18. 13. and the Elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off, vnto the high Priests palace, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

59 Now the chiefe Priestes and Elders, and all the counsell, sought false witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death;

60 But found none; yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses.

an. 2, 19. 61 And said, This fellow sayd, *I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high Priest arose, and sayd vnto him, Answerest thou nothing: What is it, which these witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the high Priest answered, and sayd vnto him, I adiure thee by the liuing God, that thou tell vs, whether thou bee the Christ the Sonne of God.

a. 16. 27 64 Iesus said vnto him, Thou hast sayd: Neuertheles I say vnto you, *Hereafter shall yee see the Sonne of
hes. 4. 16. man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in
m. 14. 10. the cloudes of heauen.

65 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemie: what further need haue wee of Witnesses? Behold, now ye haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke yee? They answered, and said, He is guiltie of death.

Iai 50. 6. 67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffetted him, and others smote him with ‖the palmes of their
r, rods. hands.

68 Saying, Prophesie vnto vs, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ * Now

69 ¶ Now Peter sate without in the palace: and a damsell came vnto him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galilee. *Mar.14. luke 22. 5 iohn 18. 2

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said vnto them that were there, This fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe, he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came vnto him, they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to sweare, saying, I know not the man. And immediately the Cocke crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Iesus, which said vnto him, Before the Cocke crow thou shalt denie me thrice. And he went out and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ deliuered to Pilate. 3 Iudas hangeth himselfe. 35 Christ is crucified.

When the morrow was come, *All the chief Priests and the Elders of the people, tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death. *Mar.15. luke 22. 6 iohn 18. 3

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and deliuered him to Pontius Pilate the Gouernour.

3 ¶ Then Iudas which had betrayed him, when hee saw that hee was condemned, repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie pieces of siluer to the chiefe Priests and Elders.

4 Saying, I haue sinned, in that I haue betrayed the innocent blood. And they sayd, What is that to vs? see thou to that.

5 And he cast downe the pieces of siluer in the Temple, *and departed, and went and hanged himselfe. *Actes 1.

6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasurie, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them the potters field to bury strangers in. *Actes 1.

8 Wherefore that field was called, *The fielde of blood vnto this day. *Zac.11.

9 ¶ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *And they tooke the thirtie pieces of siluer, the price of him that was valued, ||whom they of the children of Israel did value. ||Or. whom they bought of the children of Israel.

10 And

10 And gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.

11 And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying; Art thou the King of the Iewes? and Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when hee was accused of the chiefe Priestes and Elders he answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee.

14 And hee answered him to neuer a word: insomuch that the Gouernour marueled greatly.

ke 24 17 15 * Now at that Feast the Gouernour was wont to release vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, whom will yee that I release vnto you? Barabbas, or Iesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for enuie they had deliuered him.

19 ¶ When he was set downe on the Iudgement seat, his wife sent vnto him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame, because of him.

h.18.40 20 * But the chiefe Priestes and Elders perswaded
s 3.14. the multitude that they should aske Barabbas, and destroy Iesus.

21 The Gouernour answered, and sayd vnto them, Whether of the twaine will yee that I release vnto you? They said Barabbas.

22 Pilate said vnto them, What shal I doe then with Iesus, which is called Christ? They all sayd vnto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the Gouernour said, Why, what euill hath he done? But they cryed out the more, saying, Let him bee crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could preuaile nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he tooke water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust person: see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on vs, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas vnto them, & when he had scourged Iesus, he deliuered him to be crucified.

hn 19.1. 27 * Then the souldiers of the Gouernour tooke Ie-
r. gouer- sus into the || common hall, and gathered vnto him the
s house. whole band of souldiers.

28 And

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crowne of thornes, they put it vpon his head, and a reede in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail King of the Iewes,

30 And they spit vpon him, and tooke the reede, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they tooke the robe off from him, and put his owne raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 * And as they came out they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to beare his crosse. * Mar.15. luke 23.26

33 * And when they were come vnto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a scull. *Ioh.19.1

34 ¶ They gaue him vineger to drinke mingled with gall, and when he had tasted thereof he would not drinke.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did they cast lots. *Psal.22.1

36 And sitting downe, they watched him there:

37 And set vp ouer his head, his accusation written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 Then were there two theeues crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: If thou bee the Sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, said,

42 He saued others, himselfe he cannot saue: If he be the King of Israel, let him now come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue him.

43 * He trusted in God, let him deliuer him now if he will haue him: for he said I am the Sonne of God. * Psal.22.8 wis.2.15.16

44 The theeues also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixt houre, there was darkenesse ouer all the land vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a lowd voyce, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is to say, * My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? * Psal.22.

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard
that, said, This man calleth for Elias.
48 And straightway one of them ranne, and tooke a
Psal. 69.22 spunge, * and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede,
and gaue him to drinke.
49 The rest said, Let be, let vs see whether Elias will
come to saue him.
50 Iesus, when hee had cryed againe with a lowde
voyce, yeelded vp the ghost.
51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in
twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did
quake and the rockes rent.
52 And the graues were opened, and many bodies of
Saints which slept, arose,
53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection,
and went into the holy citie, and appeared vnto many.
54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were
with him, watching Iesus, saw the earth quake, and
those things which were done, they feared greatly, saying,
Truely, this was the Sonne of God.
55 And many women were there (beholding afarre
off) which followed Iesus from Galilee, ministring vnto
him.
56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary
the mother of Iames and Ioses, and the mother of Zebe-
dees children.
Mar. 15.42 57 * When the Euen was come, there came a rich man
Luc. 23.50 of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who also himselfe was Je-
Ioh. 19.38 sus Disciple:
58 He went to Pilate and begged the body of Iesus:
then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.
59 And when Ioseph had taken the body, he wrapped
it in a cleane linnen cloth,
60 And laid it in his owne new tombe, which hee had
hewen out in the rocke: and he rolled a great stone to the
doore of the Sepulchre and departed.
61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other
Mary sitting ouer against the Sepulchre.
62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the
Preparation, the chiefe Priests and Pharisees came to-
gether vnto Pilate,
63 Saying, Sir, wee remember that that deceiuer
said, while he was yet aliue, After three dayes I will rise
againe.
64 Command therefore that the Sepulchre bee made
sure vntill the third day, lest his Disciples come by night
and

and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shalbe worse then the first.

65 Pilate said vnto them, Yee haue a watch, goe your way, make it as sure as ye can.

66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 Hee appeareth to the women, 16 and to the disciples. 19 and sendeth them to teach and baptize.

IN the * end of the Sabbath, as it began to draw towards the first day of the weeke, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the sepulchre. * Mar. 16 Iohn 20.

2 And behold, there || was a great earthquake, for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it. || Or, had

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the Angel answered, and said vnto the women, Feare not ye: for I know that yee seeke Iesus, which was crucified,

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he sayd, Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And goe quickly, and tell his disciples that hee is risen from the dead. And behold, hee goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him: loe, I haue told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did runne to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold Iesus met them, saying, All haile. And they came, and held him by the feete, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Bee not afraid: Goe tell my brethren that I goe into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, & shewed vnto the chiefe Priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away, while we slept.

14 And if this come to the Gouernours eares wee will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the Iewes vntill this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountaine where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them saying, All power is giuen vnto me in heauen and in earth.

c.16.15 19 ¶ *Goe yee therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghost;

20 Teaching them to obserue all things whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe I am with you alway, euen vnto the end of the world. Amen.

¶ THE GOSPEL ACcording to S. Marke.

CHAP. I.

1 Iohn Baptistes office. 9 Iesus baptized, 12 tempted, 14 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others, 23 and cureth many

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God,

2 As it is written in the Prophets, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 *The voyce of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths streight.

y.40.3. 4 *Iohn did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the Baptisme of repentance, ‖for the remission of sinnes.

3.1. 5 *And there went out vnto him all the land of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem, and were all baptized of him in the riuer of Iordane confessing their sinnes.

vnto. 6 Iohn was *cloathed with camels haire, and with a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: and hee did eate locusts and wilde honie.

.3.5. c.3.4. 7 And preached, saying, There commeth one mightier then I after mee, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoope downe, and vnloose.

8 I indeede haue baptized you with water: but hee shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 *And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordane. *Mat 3.1

10 And straightway comming vp out of the water, he saw the heauens ‖ opened, and the Spirit like a doue descending vpon him. ‖ Or, clouen or rent.

11 And there came a voyce from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 *And immediatly the Spirit driueth him into the wildernesse. *Mat.4.1

13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourtie dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

14 Now after that Iohn was put in prison, *Iesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God, *Mat.4.1

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, & the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye, and beleeue the Gospel.

16 *Now as he walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.) *Mat.4.1

17 And Iesus said vnto them, Come ye after me: and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, hee saw Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway hee called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired seruants, and went after him.

21 *And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day entred into the Synagogue and taught. *Mat.4.

22 *And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes. *Mat.7.2

23 *And there was in their Synagogue a man with an vncleane spirit, and he cryed out, *Luke 4.

24 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the vncleane spirit had torne him, and cryed with a loud voyce, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselus, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authoritie commandeth he euen the vncleane spirits, and they doe obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

Matt. 8. 14. 29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with Iames and Iohn.

30 But Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lift her vp, and immediatly the feuer left her, and shee ministred vnto them.

32 And at Euen, when the Sunne did set, they brought vnto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils:

33 And all the citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases, and cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils ‖ to speake, because they knew him.

‖ to say they knew him.

35 And in the morning, rising vp a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him:

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

38 And he said vnto them, Let vs goe into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues, throughout all Galilee, and cast out deuils.

Luke. 8. 2. 40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

41 And Iesus mooued with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, bee thou cleane.

42 And assoone as hee had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away.

44 And

44 And saith vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priests, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a testimony vnto them.

45 *But hee went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter: insomuch that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desart places: and they came to him from euery quarter. *Luke 5.

CHAP. II.

2 Christ healeth one sicke of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew, 15 and eateth with Publicanes and sinners.

AND againe *hee entred into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noysed that he was in the house. *Matt. 9.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no roome to receiue them, no not so much as about the doore: and hee preached the word vnto them.

3 And they come vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsie, which was borne of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for preasse, they vnconered the roofe where hee was: and when they had broken it vp, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsie lay.

5 When Iesus saw their faith, he said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man thus speake blasphemies? *Who can forgiue sinnes but God onely? *Iob 14. Esay 43.

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that they so reasoned within themselues, hee said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed and walke?

10 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (He saith to the sicke of the palsie,)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and goe thy way into thine house.

12 And immediatly hee arose, tooke vp the bed, and went foorth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We neuer saw it on this fashion.

13 And hee went foorth againe by the sea side, and all

the multitude resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

Matt.9.9. 14 * And as he passed by, he saw Leui the sonne of Al-
, at the phaeus sitting || at the receit of Custome, and sayd vnto
e where him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.
Custome 15 And it came to passe, that as Iesus sate at meate in
receiued. his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate also toge-
ther with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many,
and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him
eate with Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his dis-
ciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Pub-
licanes and sinners?

17 When Iesus heard it, hee saith vnto them, They
that are whole, haue no neede of the Phisitian, but they
that are sicke: I came not to call the righteous, but sin-
ners to repentance.

Mat.9.14. 18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees
Luke 5.32. vsed to fast: and they come, and say vnto him, Why doe
the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy
disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of
the bride-chamber fast, while the Bridegrome is with
them? As long as they haue the Bridegrome with them,
they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegrome
shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in
those dayes.

raw, or 21 No man also soweth a piece of || new cloth on an
rough. olde garment: else the new piece that filled it vp, taketh
away from the olde, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels, else
the new wine doeth burst the bottels, and the wine is
spilled, and the bottels will bee marred: But new wine
must be put into new bottels.

Mat.12.1. 23 * And it came to passe, that hee went thorow the
corne fields on the Sabbath day, and his disciples began
as they went, to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And the Pharisees said vnto him, Behold, why
doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said vnto them, Haue yee neuer read what
Dauid did, when he had neede, and was an hungred, hee,
and they that were with him?

26 How hee went into the house of God in the dayes
of Abiathar the hie Priest, and did eate the Shewbread,
which is not lawfull to eate, but for the Priests, and gaue
also to them which were with him?

27 And he sayd vnto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath:
28 Therefore the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

CHAP, III.

1 The withered hand healed. 13 The twelue Apostles chosen. 31 Who are Christs brother, sister, and mother.

AND *hee entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand: *Matt.12
2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.
3 And he saith vnto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.
4 And he saith vnto them, Is it lawfull to doe good on the Sabbath dayes, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to kill? but they held their peace.
5 And when hee had looked round about on them with anger, being grieued for the ‖ hardnesse of their hearts, he saith vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand: And hee stretched it out: And his hand was restored whole as the other. ‖Or, blind
6 And the Pharisees went foorth, and straightway tooke counsell with the Herodians against him how they might destroy him.
7 But Iesus withdrew himselfe with his disciples to the Sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Iudea,
8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Iordane, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him.
9 And hee spake to his Disciples, that a small ship should waite on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.
10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ‖ preassed vpon him, for to touch him, as many as had plagues. ‖Or, rush
11 And vncleane spirits, when they saw him, fel downe before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Son of God.
12 And hee straitly charged them, that they should not make him knowen.
13 *And he goeth vp into a mountaine, and calleth vnto him whom he would: and they came vnto him. *Matt.10
14 And he ordeined twelue, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:
15 And to haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.
17 And James the sonne of Zebedee, and John the brother of James. (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sonnes of thunder.)
18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the sonne of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,
19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went || into an house.
|| home.
20 And the multitude commeth together againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.
21 And when his || friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himselfe.
|| kinsmen.
22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, * Hee hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the deuils, casteth he out deuils.
Mat. 9. 34.
23 And hee called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?
24 And if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.
25 And if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot stand.
26 And if Satan rise vp against himselfe, and be diuided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.
27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoyle his house.
28 * Verily I say vnto you, All sinnes shall be forgiuen vnto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies wherewith soeuer they shall blaspheme:
Mat. 12. 31.
29 But he that shal blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath neuer forgiuenesse, but is in danger of eternall damnation.
30 Because they said, He hath an vncleane spirit.
31 ¶ * There came then his brethren, and his mother, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling him.
Mat. 12. 46
32 And the multitude sate about him, and they sayd vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seeke for thee.
33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?
34 And hee looked round about on them which sate about him, and sayd, Behold, my mother and my brethren.
35 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 26 Of the seede growing secretly. 30 Of the mustard seede.

AND * hee began againe to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate on the Sea: and the whole multitude was by the Sea on the land. *Mat. 13.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fel by the way side, and the fowles of the ayre came and deuoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth: and immediatly it sprung vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the Sunne was vp, it was scorched, and because it had no roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, & the thornes grew vp, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprung vp, and increased, and brought forth, some thirtie, and some sixtie, and some an hundred.

9 And he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked of him the parable.

11 And hee sayd vnto them, Vnto you it is giuen to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but vnto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceiue, and hearing they may heare, and not vnderstand, least at any time they should be conuerted, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them. *Mat. 13.

13 And he said vnto them, Know ye not this parable? And how then will ye know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they haue heard, Satan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the word that was sowen in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowen on stonie ground, who when they haue heard the word, immediatly receiue it with gladnesse:

17 And haue no roote in themselues, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And

18 And these are they which are sowen among thorns: such as heare the word,

.Tim.6. 19 And the cares of this world, * and the deceitfulnes of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becommeth vnfruitfull.

20 And these are they which are sowen on good ground, such as heare the word, and receiue it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtie fold, some sixtie, and some an hundred.

at.5.15. 21 ¶ * And he said vnto them, Is a candle brought to be put vnder a || bushell, or vnder a bed? and not to bee set on a candlesticke?

he word in Originall, nifieth a measure, Mat. 5.15

22 * For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

at.10.26 23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And he said vnto them, Take heed what you heare: at.7.2. * With what measure ye mete, it shalbe measured to you: And vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen.

at.13.12. 25 * For he that hath, to him shalbe giuen: and he that hath not, from him shalbe taken, euen that which he hath.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede into the ground,

27 And should sleepe, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring, and grow vp, he knoweth not how,

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her selfe, first the blade, then the eare, after that, the full corne in ye eare.

ripe, 29 But when the fruit is || brought forth, immediatly he putteth in the sickle, because the harnest is come.

t.13.31 30 ¶ And hee said, * Whereunto shall wee liken the kingdome of God? or with what comparison shall wee compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seede: which when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse then all the seeds that bee in the earth.

32 But when it is sowen, it groweth vp, and becommeth greater then all herbes, and shooteth out great branches, so that the foules of the ayre may lodge vnder the shadow of it.

.13.34. 33 * And with many such parables spake he the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without a parable spake hee not vnto them, and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

.8.23. 35 * And the same day when the Euen was come, hee saith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they

tooke him euen as hee was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waues beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And hee was in the hinder part of the ship asleepe on a pillow: and they awake him, and say vnto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and said vnto the Sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And hee said vnto them, Why are yee so fearefull? How is it that you haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that euen the winde and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 Christ deliuering the possessed of the Legion of deuils, 13 they enter into the swine. 35 Iairus his daughter.

AND* they came ouer vnto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes. *Mat. 8. 2

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him out of the tombes, a man with an vncleane spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombes, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines:

4 Because that he had beene often bound with fetters and chaines, and the chaines had beene plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwaies night and day, hee was in the mountaines, and in the tombes, crying, and cutting himselfe with stones.

6 But when hee saw Iesus afarre off, hee came and worshipped him.

7 And cried with a loud voyce, and said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adiure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And hee besought him much, that hee would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there nigh vnto the mountaines, a great heard of swine feeding.

12 And

12 And all the deuills besought him, saying, Send vs vnto the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And foorthwith Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herde ranne violently downe a steepe place into the sea (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the Sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the citie, and in the countrey. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Iesus, and see him that was possessed with the deuill, and had the Legion, sitting and clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the deuill, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coastes.

18 And when he was come into the ship, hee that had beene possessed with the deuill, prayed him that hee might bee with him.

19 Howbeit, Iesus suffered him not, but saith vnto him, Goe home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And hee departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Iesus had done for him: and all men did marueile.

21 And when Iesus was passed ouer againe by the ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and he was nigh vnto the Sea.

Luc. 9. 18. 22 * And behold, there commeth one of the Rulers of the Synagogue, Iairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feete,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall liue.

24 And Iesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certaine woman which had an issue of blood twelue yeeres,

26 And had suffered many things of many Physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing better, but rather grew worse,

27 When shee had heard of Iesus, came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For

28 For shee sayd, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountaine of her blood was dryed vp: and shee felt in her body, that shee was healed of that plague.

30 And Iesus immediately knowing in himselfe that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse, and said, Who hath touched my clothes?

31 And his Disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched mee?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came, and fell downe before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And hee said vnto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While hee yet spake, there came from the Ruler of the Synagogues house, certaine which sayde, Thy daughter is dead, Why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoone as Iesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith vnto the Ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleeue.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 And hee commeth to the house of the Ruler of the Synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when hee was come in, hee sayth vnto them, Why make yee this adoe, and weepe? the damosell is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and mother of the damosell, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damosell was lying.

41 And hee tooke the damosell by the hand, and sayd vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damosell (I say vnto thee) Arise.

42 And straightway the Damosell arose, and walked, for shee was of the age of twelue yeeres: and they were astonished with a great astonishment:

43 And hee charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that some thing should bee giuen her to eate.

CHAP

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countreymen. 18 Iohn Baptist is beheaded 45 Christ walketh on the sea.

at.13.54 AND * hee went out from thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, hee began to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? And what wisedome is this which is giuen vnto him, that euen such mighty workes are wrought by his handes.

3 Is not this the Carpenter, the sonne of Mary, the brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda, and Simon? And are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended at him.

hn 4.44 4 But Iesus sayd vnto them, * A Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kinne, and in his owne house.

5 And hee could there doe no mighty worke, saue that he laid his hand vpon a few sicke folke, and healed them.

6 And he marueiled because of their vnbeliefe. * And he went round about the villages teaching.

7 ¶ * And he called vnto him the twelue, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits,

at 9.35 13.22. at.10.1.

8 And commaunded them that they should take nothing for their iourney, saue a staffe onely: no scrip, no bread, no || money in their purse:

9 But be shodde with sandales: and not put on two coates.

10 And hee said vnto them, In what place soeuer ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when yee depart thence, * shake off the dust vnder your feete for a testimonie against them: Verely I say vnto you, that it shall bee more tolerable for Sodome and Gomorrah in the day of iudgement then for that citie.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

.10.14 ts 13.51 n.5.14.

13 And they cast out many deuils, * and anointed with oyle, many that were sicke, and healed them.

14 * And King Herod heard of him (for his name was spread abroad:) and hee said that Iohn the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty workes doe shew foorth themselues in him.

.14.1

15 Others

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.

16 * But when Herode heard thereof, he saide, It is John, whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead. *Luke 3 1

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth and layd holde vpon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, for he had married her.

18 For John had said vnto Herode, * It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife. *Leui. 18.

19 Therefore Herodias had ‖ a quarell against him, and would haue killed him, but shee could not. ‖ Or, an inward grudge.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a iust man, and an holy, and ‖ obserued him: and when hee heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. ‖ Or, kept him, or saued him.

21 And when a conuenient day was come, that Herod on his birth-day made a supper to his lords, high captaines, and chiefe estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate with him, the King said vnto the damosell, Aske of me whatsoeuer thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And hee sware vnto her, whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of mee, I will giue it thee, vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, & said vnto her mother, What shal I aske? and she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And shee came in straightway with haste vnto the King, and asked, saying, I will that thou giue me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the King was exceeding sorry, yet for his oathes sake, and for their sakes which sate with him, hee would not reiect her.

27 And immediately the King sent ‖ an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison, ‖ Or, one of his guard.

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the damosell, and the damosell gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and tooke vp his corpse, and laid it in a tombe.

30 * And the Apostles gathered themselues together vnto Iesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. *Luke 9.

31 And he said vnto them, Come yee your selues apart into a desart place, and rest a while. For there were many comming and going, and they had no leasure so much as to eate.

Mat.14.13 32 * And they departed into a desert place by shippe priuately.

33 And the people saw them departing, & many knew him, and ran afoote thither out of all cities, and ouerwent them, and came together vnto him.

Mat.6.39 34 * And Iesus when hee came out, saw much people, and was mooued with compassion toward them, because they were as sheepe not hauing a shepheard: and he began to teach them many things.

Mat.14.15 35 * And when the day was now farre spent, his disciples came vnto him, and said, this is a desert place, and now the time is farre passed.

36 Send them away, that they may goe into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselues bread: for they haue nothing to eat.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they say vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hundred || peniworth of bread, and giue them to eat?

The Romane peny is seuen pence halfepeny, Mat. 18.28.

38 He saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? goe, and see. And when they knew, they say, Fiue, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse.

40 And they sate downe in rankes by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when hee had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, he looked vp to heauen, and blessed, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his Disciples to set before them; and the two fishes diuided he among them all.

42 And they did all eate, and were filled.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eate of the loaues, were about fiue thousand men.

45 And straightway hee constrained his Disciples to get into the ship, and to goe to the other side before || vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

Or, ouer against Bethsaida.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountaine to pray.

Mat.14.23 47 * And when Euen was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toyling in rowing (for the wind was contrary vnto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, he commeth vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the Sea, they

they supposed it had beene a spirit and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediately hee talked with them, and saith vnto them, Be of good cheere, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And hee went vp vnto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselues beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaues, for their heart was hardened.

53 *And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore. *Mat. 14.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran thorow that whole region round about, & began to cary about in beds, those that were sicke, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever hee entred, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sicke in the streetes and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment, and as many as touched ‖ him, were made whole. ‖ Or, it.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault with the Disciples, for eating with vnwashen hands. 15 Meate defileth not the man.

THen * came together vnto him the Pharises, and certaine of the Scribes, which came from Hierusalem. *Mat. 15.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eare bread with ‖ defiled (that is to say, with vnwashen) hands, they found fault. ‖ Or, com

3 For the Pharises and all the Iewes, except they wash their hands ‖ oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders. ‖ Or, dilig ly, in the ginall, wi the fist: T ophilact, to the elbo

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eate not. And many other things there bee, which they haue received to hold, as the washing of cups and ‖ pots, brasen vessels, and of ‖ tables. ‖ Sextari is about a pint and halfe.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walke not thy Disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate bread with vnwashen hands? ‖ Or, bed

6 He answered and said vnto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, *This people honoureth mee with their lips, but their heart is farre from me. * Esai. 29 Matt. 15.

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they worship me, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

8 For laying aside the Commandement of God, yee
hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pottes and
cups: and many other such like things ye doe.
frustrate 9 And hee sayd vnto them, Full well yee || reiect the
Commandement of God, that yee may keepe your owne
tradition.
10 For Moses said, Honour thy father & thy mother:
and whosoeuer curseth father or mother, let him die the death.
11 But yee say, If a man shall say to his father or mo-
Mat.15.5. ther, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoeuer
thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.
12 And yee suffer him no more to doe ought for his fa-
ther, or his mother:
13 Making the word of God of none effect through
your tradition, which yee haue deliuered: and many such
like things doe ye.
Mat.15.10 14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people vnto him,
hee said vnto them, Hearken vnto mee euery one of you,
and vnderstand.
15 There is nothing from without a man, that en-
tering into him, can defile him: but the things which
come out of him, those are they that defile the man.
16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.
17 And when hee was entred into the house from the
people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.
18 And he saith vnto them, Are yee so without vnder-
standing also? Doe yee not perceiue that whatsoeuer
thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile
him,
19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the
belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?
20 And he said, That which commeth out of the man,
that defileth the man.
Ge.6.5. 21 * For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed
8.21. euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,
Mat.15.19. 22 * Thefts, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasci-
uiousnesse, an euill eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishnesse:
23 All these euill thoughts come from within, and de-
file the man.
Mat.15.21 24 ¶ * And from thence hee arose, and went into the
borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house and
would haue no man know it, but he could not be hid.
25 For a certaine woman, whose young daughter had
an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his
feete.
Gentile 26 (The woman was a || Greeke, a Syrophenician
by

by nation:) and shee besought him that hee would cast foorth the deuill out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first bee filled: for it is not meete to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto the dogges.

28 And she answered, and said vnto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogs vnder the table eate of the childrens crumbes.

29 And he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the deuill gone out, and her daughter laid vpon the bed.

31 ¶ And againe departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came vnto the Sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring vnto him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speach: and they beseech him to put his hand vpon him.

33 And hee tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and he spit, and touched his tongue,

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and saith vnto him, Ephphatha, that is to say, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more hee charged them, so much the more a great deale they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, Hee hath done all things well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously, 10 and refuseth to giue a signe to the Pharisees.

IN those dayes * the multitude being very great, and hauing nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and saith vnto them, *Mat. 15.

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now beene with mee three dayes, and haue nothing to eate:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they will faint by the way: for diuers of them came from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men wᵗ̃ bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And hee asked them, How many loaues haue yee? And they said, Seuen.

6 And hee commanded the people to sit downe on the ground; and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thanks, and brake, and gaue to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eate, and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand, and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway hee entred into a shippe with his Disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

Matt. 16. 1. 11 * And the Pharisees came foorth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doeth this generation seeke after a signe? Verily I say vnto you, There shall no signe be giuen vnto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship againe, departed to the other side.

Matt. 16. 5. 14 ¶ * Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the shippe with them more then one loafe.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heede, beware of the leauen of the Pharises, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, It is

Matt. 16. 7. * because we haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, he saith vnto them, Why reason ye, because ye haue no bread? Perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderstand? Haue ye your hearts yet hardened?

18 Hauing eyes, see yee not? and hauing eares, heare ye not? and doe ye not remember?

19 When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thousand, how many baskets full of fragments tooke yee vp? They say vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when the seuen among foure thousand: how many baskets full of fragments tooke yee vp? And they sayd, Seuen.

21 And he said vnto them, How is it that yee doe not vnderstand?

22 ¶ And he commeth to Bethsaida, and they bring a blinde man vnto him, and besought him to touch him:

23 And hee tooke the blinde man by the hand, and led him

him out of the towne, and when hee had spit on his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, hee asked him if hee saw ought.

24 And hee looked vp, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that, he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke vp: and hee was restored, and saw euery man clearely.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

27 ¶ * And Iesus went out, and his Disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his Disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am? *Mat.16

28 And they answered, Iohn the Baptist: but some say Elias: and others, One of the Prophets.

29 And he saith vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? And Peter answereth and saith vnto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them, that they should tell no man of him.

31 And hee began to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and bee reiected of the Elders, and of the chiefe Priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes rise againe.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when hee had turned about, and looked on his Disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou sauourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when hee had called the people vnto him, with his Disciples also, hee said vnto them, * Whosoeuer will come after me, let him deny himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow me. *Mat.

35 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, the same shall saue it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule?

37 Or what shal a man giue in exchange for his soule?

38 * Whosoeuer therefore shall bee ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Sonne of man bee ashamed, when hee commeth in the glory of his Father, with the holy Angels. *Mat.

2 Iesus is transfigured. 30 Hee sheweth his death and resurrection, 33 and giueth diuers instructions to his disciples.

Luke 16.28 AND hee sayd vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power.

Mat 17.1. 2 ¶ * And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an high mountaine apart by themselues: and hee was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no Fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Iesus.

5 And Peter answered, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here, and let vs make three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For hee wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that ouershaddowed them: and a voyce came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, saue Iesus onely with themselues.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, hee charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seene, till the Sonne of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselues, questioning one with another, what the rising from the dead should meane.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And hee answered, and tolde them, Elias verely Mal 3.23 commeth first, and restoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Sonne of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say vnto you, That Elias is indeede come, and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they listed, as it is written of him.

Mat 17.14. 14 ¶ * And when he came to his Disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, & the Scribes questioning with them.

15 And

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the Scribes, What question ye ‖with them?

‖Or, among your selues.

17 And one of the multitude answered, and said, Master, I haue brought vnto thee my sonne, which hath a dumbe spirit.

18 And wheresoeuer he taketh him, he ‖ teareth him, and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

‖Or, dashe him.

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithlesse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: & when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and hee fell on the ground, and wallowed, foming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it agoe since this came vnto him? and he said, Of a childe.

22 And oftentimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, haue compassion on vs, and helpe vs.

23 Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cried out, and said with teares, Lord, I beleeue, helpe thou mine vnbelieffe.

25 When Iesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foule spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumbe and deafe spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cryed, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke him by the hand, and lifted him vp, and he arose.

28 And when hee was come into the house, his disciples asked him priuately, Why could not wee cast him out?

29 And he said vnto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ *And they departed thence, and passed thorow Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

*Mat. 17.

31 For he taught his disciples, and sayd vnto them, The Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of men,

and

and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, hee shall rise the third day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

Mat. 18. 1. 33 ¶ * And hee came to Capernaum, and being in the house, hee asked them, What was it that yee disputed among your selues by the way?

34 But they held their peace: For by the way they had disputed among themselues, who should bee the greatest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and saith vnto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall bee last of all, and seruant of all.

36 And hee tooke a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when hee had taken him in his armes, hee said vnto them,

37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such children in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.

Luke 9. 49 38 ¶ * And Iohn answered him, saying, Master, wee saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and he followeth not vs, and we forbade him, because he followeth not vs.

1 Cor. 12. 3 39 But Iesus said, Forbid him not, * for there is no man, which shall doe a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me.

40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.

Mat. 10. 42 41 * For whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke in my Name, because ye belong to Christ: Verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.

Mat. 18. 6. 42 * And whosoeuer shall offend one of these little ones that beleeue in mee, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and hee were cast into the sea.

Mat. 5. 29 43 * And if thy hand || offend thee, cut it off: It is
Mat. 18. 8. better for thee to enter into life maimed, then hauing two
|| Gr. cause to offend. hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shall bee
Esay 66. 24 quenched:

44 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foote offend thee, cut it off: It is better for thee to enter halt into life, then hauing two feete, to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched:

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

|| Gr. cause to offend 47 And if thine eye || offend thee, plucke it out: It is better for thee to enter into the Kingdome of God with one

one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hell fire:
48 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire is not quenched.
49 For euery one shall bee salted with fire, * and euery sacrifice shall be salted with salt. *Leuit. 2
50 *Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another. *Matt. 5

CHAP. X.

2 Touching diuorcement. 13 Little children brought to Christ. 23 The danger of riches.

AND * hee rose from thence, and commeth into the coastes of Iudea by the farther side of Iordan: and the people resort vnto him againe, and as hee was woont, he taught them againe. *Matt. 8
2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.
3 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, What did Moses command you?
4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.
5 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnesse of your heart, he wrote you this precept.
6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.
7 For this cause shall a man leaue his father and mother, and cleane to his wife,
8 And they twaine shall bee one flesh: so then they are no more twaine, but one flesh.
9 What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man put asunder.
10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of the same matter.
11 And hee saith vnto them, * Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. *Matt. 5 and 19.
12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.
13 ¶ * And they brought yong children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. *Mat. 1
14 But when Iesus saw it, hee was much displeased, and said vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verily

15 Verily I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little childe, hee shall not enter therein.

16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, put his hands vpon them, and blessed them.

Mt.19.16 17 ¶ * And when hee was gone foorth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what shall I doe that I may inherite eternall life?

18 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? there is no man good, but one, that is, God.

19 Thou knowest the Commaundements, Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And hee answered, and sayd vnto him, Master, all these haue I obserued from my youth.

21 Then Iesus beholding him, loued him, and sayd vnto him, One thing thou lackest; Goe thy way, sell whatsoeuer thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, take vp the crosse and follow me.

22 And hee was sad at that saying, and went away grieued: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Iesus looked round about, and saith vnto his disciples, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God?

24 And the Disciples were astonied at his wordes. But Iesus answereth againe, and saith vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God?

25 It is easier for a Camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 And Iesus looking vpon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible.

Mt.19.27 28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, wee haue left all, and haue followed thee.

29 And Iesus answered, and said, Verily I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake, and the Gospels,

30 But hee shall receiue an hundred fold now in this time,

time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternall life:

31 *But many that are first, shalbe last: & the last first. * Mat 19.

32 ¶ *And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem: And Iesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and hee tooke againe the twelue, and began to tell them what things should happen vnto him, * Mat. 20.

33 Saying, Behold we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit vpon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise againe.

35 ¶ *And Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedee, come vnto him, saying, Master, we would thou shouldest doe for vs whatsoeuer we shall desire. * Mat. 20.

36 And hee said vnto them, What would yee that I should doe for you?

37 They sayd vnto him, Grant vnto vs that wee may sit one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Yee know not what yee aske. Can ye drinke of the cup that I drinke of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they said vnto him, Wee can. And Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye shall indeed drinke of the cup that I drinke of: and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to giue, but it shalbe giuen to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with Iames and Iohn.

42 But Iesus called them to him, and saith vnto them, *Yee know that they which || are accounted to rule ouer the Gentiles, exercise lordship ouer them: and their great ones exercise authoritie vpon them. * Luk. 22. || Or, think good.

43 But so shall it not bee among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, shalbe your minister.

44 And whosoeuer of you will be the chiefest, shall be seruant of all.

45 For euen the Son of man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, & to giue his life a ransome for many

46 ¶ *And

Mat.20.29. 46 ¶ *And they came to Jericho: and as hee went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the sonne of Timeus, sate by the high wayes side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say: Jesus thou Son of David, haue mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that hee should holde his peace: but hee cried the more a great deale, Thou Sonne of David, haue mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And hee casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered, and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I should doe vnto thee? The blinde man sayd vnto him, Lord, That I might receiue my sight.

52 And Jesus said vnto him, Goe thy way, thy faith hath || made thee whole: And immediately hee receiued his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

|| saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Hierusalem. 12 He curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree. 15 He purgeth the Temple.

Mat.21.1. AND *when they came nigh to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage and Bethanie, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth foorth two of his disciples,

2 And saith vnto them, Goe your way into the village over against you, and assoone as ye bee entred into it, yee shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe yee this? Say yee, that the Lord hath neede of him: and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certaine of them that stood there, said vnto them, What doe ye losing the colt?

6 And they sayde vnto them, euen as Jesus had commanded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed bee the Kingdome of our father Dauid, that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the Highest.

11 And Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple, and when he had looked round about vpon all things, and now the euentide was come, he went out vnto Bethany, with the twelue.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 * And seeing a figtree afarre off, hauing leaues, hee came, if haply he might find any thing thereon, and when hee came to it, hee found nothing but leaues, for the time of figges was not yet. * Mat. 21.

14 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto it, No man eate fruit of thee hereafter for euer. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ * And they come to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold doues, * Mat. 21.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carie any vessell thorow the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, My house shall bee called of all nations the house of prayer? But ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe Priestes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when Euen was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ * And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the figtree dryed vp from the rootes. * Mat. 21.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith vnto him, Master, behold the figtree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Iesus answering, sayeth vnto them, || Haue faith in God. || Or, hold faith of G

23 For verely I say vnto you, That whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remooued, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which he saith, shall come to passe, he shall haue whatsoeuer he saith.

24 Therefore I say vnto you, * What things soeuer

ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye receiue them, and ye shall haue them.

Mat.6.14 25 And when ye stand praying, * forgiue, if ye haue ought against any: that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespasses.

26 But if yee doe not forgiue, neither will your Father which is in heauen forgiue your trespasses.

Mat.21.23 27 ¶ And they come againe to Hierusalem, * and as hee was walking in the Temple, there come to him the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders,

28 And say vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie to doe these things?

29 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, I will also aske of you one ‖question, and answere me, and I will tell you by what authority I doe these things.

‖ thing.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? Answere me.

31 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did yee not beleeue him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said vnto Iesus, Wee cannot tell. And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Neither doe I tell you by what authority I doe these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard. 13 Touching the paying of tribute, 18 and the resurrection. 43 The poore widow and her two mites.

Mat.21.33 And * he began to speake vnto them by parables. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine-fat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey.

2 And at the season, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty,

4 And againe he sent vnto them another seruant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe hee sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Hauing

6 Hauing yet therefore one sonne his welbeloued, hee sent him also last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.
7 But those husbandmen said among themselues, This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.
8 And they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.
9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will giue the vineyard vnto others.
10 * And haue ye not read this Scripture? The stone which ye builders reiected, is become the head of ye corner. * Psa. 118.
11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.
12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.
13 * And they send vnto him certaine of the Pharises, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words. * Mat. 22.
14 And when they were come, they say vnto him, Master, wee know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in trueth. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?
15 Shall we giue, or shall we not giue? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said vnto them, Why tempt yee mee? Bring me a ‖ peny that I may see it.
16 And they brought it: and hee saith vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said, vnto him, Cesars.
17 And Iesus answering, saide vnto them, Render to Cesar, the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marueiled at him.
18 ¶ * Then come vnto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying, * Mat. 22.
19 Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If a mans brother die, and leaue his wife behind him, and leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.
20 Now there were seuen brethren: and the first tooke a wife, and dying left no seede.
21 And the second tooke her, and died, neither left hee any seed, and the third likewise.
22 And the seuen had her, and left no seed: last of all, the woman died also.

‖ Valuing our money, seuen pence halfepeny, Mat. 18.2

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall shee bee of them? for the seuen had her to wife.

24 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Doe ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage: but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: haue yee not read in the booke of Moses, how in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob?

27 Hee is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing: ye therefore doe greatly erre.

Mat, 22.35 28 ¶ * And one of the Scribes came, and hauing heard them reasoning together, and perceiuing that hee answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandement of all?

29 And Iesus answered him: the first of all the commandements is, Heare, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: This is the first commandement.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe: there is none other commandement greater then these.

32 And the Scribe said vnto him, Well Master, thou hast said the trueth: for there is one God, and there is none other but hee.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus saw that hee answered discreetly, he said vnto him, Thou art not far from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

Mat, 22.41 35 ¶ * And Iesus answered, and said, while he taught in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe sayd by the holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole.

37 Dauid therefore himselfe calleth him Lord, and whence is hee then his sonne? And the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And

38 ¶ And he said vnto them in his doctrine, *Beware of the Scribes, which loue to goe in long clothing, and loue salutations in the market places, *Mat. 23.

39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the vppermost roomes at feasts:

40 *Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation. * Mat. 23.

41 ¶ *And Iesus sate ouer against the treasury and beheld how the people cast ‖ money into the treasury: and many that were rich, cast in much. * Luke 21.

42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and shee threw in two ‖ mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he calleth vnto him his disciples, and saith vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the treasury.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want, did cast in all that she had, euen all her liuing.

‖ *A piece of brasse money. See Mat. 10. 9*

‖ *It is the seuenth part of one piece of that brasse money.*

CHAP. XIII.

1 The destruction of the Temple. 9 Persecutions for the Gospel. 14 Great calamities to the Iewes. 24 Christs comming to iudgement.

AND* as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples saith vnto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here. *Mat. 24.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwne downe.

3 And as hee sate vpon the mount of Oliues, ouer against the Temple, Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, asked him priuately,

4 *Tell vs when shall these things bee? And what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled? *Mat. 24 3

5 And Iesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

7 And when yee shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: For such things must needs be, but the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall be earthquakes in diuers places, and there shall bee famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of ‖ sorrowes.

‖ *The word in the original importeth the paines of a woman in travaile.*

9 But take heede to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to counsels, and in the Synagogues yee shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the Gospel must first bee published among all nations.

Mat. 10. 19. 11 *But when they shall leade you, and deliuer you vp, take no thought before hand what ye shall speake, neither doe yee premeditate: but whatsoeuer shall be giuen you in that houre, that speake yee: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise vp against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And yee shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake: but he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saued.

Mat. 24. 15 14 ¶ *But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth vnderstand) then let them that be in Iudea, flee to the mountaines:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not goe downe into the house, neither enter therein to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe for to take vp his garment.

17 But woe to them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight bee not in the winter:

19 For in those dayes shall bee affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, vnto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortned those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the elects sake whom hee hath chosen, he hath shortned the dayes.

Mat. 24. 23 21 *And then, if any man shall say to you, Loe here is Christ, or loe, he is there: beleeue him not.

22 For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, euen the elect.

23 But take yee heede: behold, I haue foretold you all things.

Mat 42. 29. 24 ¶ *But in those dayes, after the tribulation, the Sun shalbe darkened, & the Moone shal not giue her light

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall, and the powers that are in heauen shall be shaken.

26 And

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the clouds, with great power and glory.
27 And then shall he send his Angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from the vttermost part of the earth, to the vttermost part of heauen.
28 Now learne a parable of the figge tree. When her branch is yet tender, and putteth foorth leaues, yee know that Summer is neere;
29 So ye in like maner, when ye shal see these things come to passe, know that it is nigh, euen at the doores.
30 Verely I say vnto you, That this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.
31 Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.
32 ¶ But of that day, and that houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne, but the Father.
33 * Take yee heede, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. *Mat. 24.
34 For the Sonne of man is as a man taking a farre iourney, who left his house, and gaue authoritie to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commanded the porter to watch:
35 Watch ye therefore, (for yee know not when the master of the house commeth, at Euen, or at midnight, or at the cocke crowing, or in the morning.)
36 Lest comming suddenly, he find you sleeping.
37 And what I say vnto you, I say vnto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Conspiracie against Christ. 3 A woman powred oyle on his head. 10 Iudas selleth him, 44 betrayeth him, 66 Peter denied him.

After * two dayes was the feast of the Passeouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. *Matt. 26.
2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there bee an vproare of the people.
3 ¶ * And being in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at meate, there came a woman hauing an Alabaster box of oyntment of || Spikenard very precious, and she brake the box, and powred it on his head. * Matt. 26 || Or, pure nard, or liquid nard.
4 And there were some that had indignation within themselues, and said, Why was this waste of the oyntment made?

ee Mat. 28. 5 For it might haue beene solde for more then three hundred || pence, and haue beene giuen to the poore: and they murmured against her.

6 And Iesus said, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? She hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and whensoeuer ye will ye may doe them good: but me ye haue not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoynt my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, Whereseuer this Gospel shall be preached throwout the whole world, this also that she hath done shalbe spoken of for a memoriall of her.

Mat. 26. 14. 10 ¶ * And Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went vnto the chiefe Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to giue him money. And he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

Mat. 26. 17. 12 ¶ * And the first day of vnleauened bread, when they || killed the Passeouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee goe, and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer?

r, sacrid.

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith vnto them, Goe ye into the citie, and there shall meete you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And whereseuer he shall goe in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large vpper roome furnished, and prepared: there make ready for vs.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the citie, and found as he had said vnto them: and they made ready the Passeouer.

17 And in the euening he commeth with the twelue.

Mat. 26. 20. 18 And as they sate and did eate, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, one of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to bee sorrowfull, and to say vnto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said vnto them, It is one of the twelue, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Sonne of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed. Good were it for that man, if he had neuer beene borne.

22 ¶ * And

22 ¶ * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaue to them, and said, Take, eate: this is my body. *Mat. 26

23 And hee tooke the cup, and when hee had giuen thankes, he gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And hee said vnto them, This is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruit of the Vine, vntil that day that I drinke it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an ‖ hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives. ‖ Or, Psal.

27 * And Iesus saith vnto them, All ye shall bee offended because of mee this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shall be scattered. *Mat. 26

28 But after that I am risen, I will goe before you into Galilee.

29 * But Peter said vnto him, Although all shall bee offended, yet will not I. *Mat. 26.

30 And Iesus saith vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, That this day, euen in this night, before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 * And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane, and he saith to his disciples, Sit yee heere, while I shall pray. *Mat. 26.

33 And hee taketh with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heauie,

34 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowfull vnto death: tary ye heere, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, & fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee, take away this cup from me: Neuertheless, not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And hee commeth, and findeth them sleeping, and saith vnto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? Couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch yee and pray, lest yee enter into temptation: The spirit truely is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe hee went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when hee returned, hee found them asleepe

againe, (for their eyes were heauie) neither wist they what to answere him.

41 And hee commeth the third time, and saith vnto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold, the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs goe, Loe, hee that betrayeth mee, is at hand.

t.26.47 43 ¶ *And immediatly, while he yet spake, commeth Iudas one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues from the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that same is he: take him, and leade him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, & tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a seruant of the high Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Are yee come out as against a thiefe, with swords, and with staues to take me?

49 I was dayly with you in the Temple teaching, and yee tooke mee not: but the Scriptures must bee fulfilled.

50 And they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, having a linnen cloth cast about his naked body, and the yong men laid hold on him.

52 And hee left the linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

t.26.57. 53 ¶ *And they led Iesus away to the high Priest, and with him were assembled all the chiefe Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him afarre off, euen into the palace of the high Priest: and he sate with the seruants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

t.26.59 55 *And the chiefe Priests, and all the councell sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death, and found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certaine, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

58 Wee heard him say, I will destroy this Temple that

that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesse agree together.

60 And the high Priest stood vp in the middes, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? What is it which these witnesse against thee?

61 But hee held his peace, and answered nothing. Againe, the high Priest asked him, and said vnto him, Art thou the Christ, the Sonne of the Blessed?

62 And Iesus said, I am: * and ye shall see the Sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in the cloudes of heauen. *Mat.24.

63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, and saith, What neede we any further witnesses?

64 Yee haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke yee? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to couer his face, and to buffet him, and to say vnto him, Prophesie: And the seruants did strike him with the palmes of their hands.

66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there commeth one of the maides of the high Priest, *Mat.26.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himselfe, shee looked vpon him, and said, And thou also wast with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither vnderstand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 And a maide saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And hee denied it againe. And a little after they that stood by said againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speach agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse & to sweare, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speake. *Mat.26.

72 * And the second time the cocke crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Iesus said vnto him, Before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice. And when he thought thereon, ‖ he wept. ‖Or, he wept abundantly, or he began to weepe.

CHAP. XV.

1 Iesus brought bound and accused before Pilate, 14 deliuered to bee crucified. 27 hangeth betweene two theeues, 43 and is honourably buried.

AND * straightway in the morning the chiefe Priests held a consultation with the Elders and Scribes, *Matt.27.

and

and the whole councell, and bound Iesus, and carried him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And hee answering, said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chiefe Priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

Mat.27.13. 4 *And Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Iesus yet answered nothing, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 Now at that Feast hee released vnto them one prisoner, whomsoeuer they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them, that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloude, began to desire him to doe as he had euer done vnto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 (For he knew that the chiefe Priests had deliuered him for enuie.)

11 But the chiefe Priests mooued the people, that hee should rather release Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What wil ye then that I shall doe vnto him whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried out againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, Why, what euill hath hee done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas vnto them, and deliuered Iesus when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his head,

18 And began to salute him, Haile King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and did spit vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the purple from him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 *And

21 *And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, comming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to beare his Crosse. *Mat. 27.

22 And they bring him vnto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he receiued it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots vpō them, what euery man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written ouer, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

27 And with him they crucified two theeues, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, *And he was numbred with the transgressours. *Isai 53.

29 And they that passed by, rayled on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the Crosse.

31 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking, sayd among themselues with the Scribes, Hee saued others, himselfe he cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the Crosse, that wee may see and beleeue: And they that were crucified with him, reuiled him.

33 And when the sixt houre was come, there was darknesse ouer the whole land vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a lowde voyce, saying, Eloi, *Eloi, lamasabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? *Mat. 27.

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let alone, let vs see whether Elias will come to take him downe.

37 And Iesus cried with a lowde voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the Centurion which stood ouer against him, saw that hee so cryed out, and gaue vp the ghost, he said, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 There

40 There were also women looking on a farre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Joses and Salome:

ke 8.3. 41 Who also when he was in Galilee,* followed him, and ministred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem.

.27.57. 42 ¶ * And now when the Euen was come, (because it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath.)

43 Ioseph of Arimathea, an honourable Counseller, which also waited for the kingdome of God, came and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and craued the body of Iesus

44 And Pilate marueiled if he were already dead, and calling vnto him the Centurion, he asked him whether he had beene any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioseph.

46 And he bought fine linnen, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the Sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 Sendeth foorth his Apostles, 19 and ascendeth into heauen.

AND when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames, and Salome, had bought sweete spices, that they might come and annoint him.

ke 24.1. 2 * And very earely in the morning, the first day of the
n 20.1. weeke they came vnto the Sepulchre, at the rising of the Sunne:

3 And they said among themselues, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the Sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

m 20.11 5 * And entring into the Sepluchre, they saw a yong man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith vnto them, Be not affrighted, ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: hee is risen, hee is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But

7 But goe your way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that
hee goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him * as * Mat. 2
he said vnto you.
8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepul-
chre, for they trembled, and were amazed, neither sayd
they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.
9 ¶ Now when Iesus was risen early, the first day of
the weeke, * he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out
of whom he had cast seuen deuils.
10 And shee went and tolde them that had beene with * Ioh. 20
him, as they mourned and wept. * Luke 8
11 And they, when they had heard that hee was aliue,
and had beene seene of her, beleeued not.
12 ¶ After that, hee appeared in another forme * vnto * Luk. 2
two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.
13 And they went and tolde it to the residue, neither
beleeued they them.
14 ¶ * Afterward hee appeared vnto the eleuen, as * Luk. 2
they sat || at meate, and vpbraided them with their vn- iohn 20
beliefe, and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not || Or, tog
them, which had seene him after hee was risen.
15 * And hee said vnto them, Goe yee into all the * Mat. 2
world and preach the Gospel vnto euery creature.
16 Hee that beleeueth and is baptized, shall bee saued,
* but he that beleeueth not shalbe damned. * Ioh. 12
17 And these signes shall follow them that beleeue,
* In my Name shall they cast out deuils: * they shall * Act. 16
speake with new tongues.
18 * They shall take vp serpents, and if they drinke * Actes 2
any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, * they shall lay * Actes
hands on the sicke, and they shall recouer.
19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken vnto them, * Actes 2
hee was receiued vp into heauen, * and sate on the right * Luk. 2
hand of God.
20 And they went foorth, and preached euery where, * Heb. 2
the Lord working with them, * and confirming the word
with signes following. Amen.

THE

¶ THE GOSPEL ACcording to S. Luke.

CHAP. I.

1 Lukes Preface. 5 The conception of Iohn Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 57 The natiuitie and circumcision of Iohn.

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeued among vs;

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning were eye witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to mee also, hauing had perfect vnderstanding of things from the very first, to write vnto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast beene instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herod the King of Iudea, a certaine Priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the Commandements and ordinances of the Lord, blamelesse.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in yeeres.

8 And it came to passe, that while hee executed the Priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custome of the Priests office; his lot was to burne incense when hee went into the Temple of the Lord.

d.30.7 6,17. 10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the Altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drinke neither wine nor strong drinke, and he shall bee filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

16 *And many of the children of Israel shall he turne to the Lord their God. * Mal. 4. 6.

17 And he shall goe before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children and the disobedient ‖ to the wisedome of the iust, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. ‖ Or, by.

18 And Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in yeeres.

19 And the Angel answering, sayd vnto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not able to speake, vntill the day that these things shalbe performed, because thou beleeuest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that he tarried so long in the Temple.

22 And when hee came out, hee could not speake vnto them: and they perceiued that hee had seene a vision in the Temple: for hee beckened vnto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe that assoone as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, hee departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elizabeth conceiued, and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with mee in the dayes wherin he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a Virgine espoused to a man whose name was Ioseph, of the house of Dauid, and the Virgins name was Mary.

28 And the Angell came in vnto her, and sayd, Haile thou that art ‖ highly fauoured, The Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women. ‖ Or, graciously accepted, or mucc graced. See verse 30.

29 And when shee saw him, shee was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what maner of salutation this should be.

30 And

30 And the Angel said vnto her, Feare not Mary, for thou hast found fauour with God.

a.7.14. 31 *And behold, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, r.1.21. and bring forth a Sonne, and shalt call his Name Iesus.

32 He shalbe great, and shalbe called the Sonne of the Highest, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid.

an.7.14. 33 *And he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for h.4.7. euer, and of his kingdome there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, how shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the Angel answered and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the Highest shall ouershadow thee. Therefore also that holy thing which shall be borne of thee, shall bee called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, shee hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age, and this is the sixt moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be vnpossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaide of the Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word, and the Angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill countrey with haste, into a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her wombe, and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And shee spake out with a loude voyce, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy wombe.

43 And whence is this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For loe, as soone as the voyce of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for ioy.

45 And blessed is she || that beleeueth, for there shall bee a performance of those things, which were tolde her from the Lord.

*, which] ceiued that re.

46 And Mary said, My soule doth magnifie the Lord,

47 And my spirit hath reioyced in God my Sauiour.

48 For hee hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For

49 For hee that is mighty, hath done to mee great things, and holy is his Name.
50 And his mercy is on them that feare him, from generation to generation.
51 * He hath shewed strength with his arme,* he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. * Esa. 51.
52 * He hath put downe the mighty from their seates, and exalted them of low degree. * Psal 33. * 1.Sam 2.
53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away. * Psal 34.
54 Hee hath holpen his seruant Israel, * in remembrance of his mercy. * Ier.31 3. * Psa.132.
55 * As hee spake to our forefathers, to Abraham, and to his seede for euer. Gen.17.1.
56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her owne house.
57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that she should be deliuered, and she brought forth a sonne.
58 And her neighbors and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with her.
59 And it came to passe that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.
60 And his mother answered, and said, not so, but hee shall be called John.
61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred that is called by this name.
62 And they made signes to his father, how hee would haue him called.
63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying His name is John: and they marueiled all.
64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and prayled God.
65 And feare came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these || sayings were noysed abroad throwout all the hill countrey of Judea. || Or, things.
66 And all they that had heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.
67 And his father Zacharias was filled [illegible] the holy Ghost, and Prophesied, saying,
68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for hee hath visited and redeemed his people.
69 And hath raised vp a mighty saluation for vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid. * Psa.132.1

ere. 23.5. d 30.9, 70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which haue beene since the world began.

71 That wee should be saued from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate vs,

72 To performe the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy Couenant,

Gen. 22.16 73 * The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

74 That hee would grant vnto vs, that wee being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, might serue him without feare,

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the Prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes,

77 To giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, || by the remission of their sinnes,

Or, for. Or, bowels of mercy. Or, Sunne ing, or anch. Zach. 3 Esay. 11.1 al. 4. 2. m. 24 17. 78 Through the || tender mercy of our God, whereby the || day-spring from an high hath visited vs.

79 To giue light to them that sit in darknesse, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the desarts, till the day of his shewing vnto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane Empire. 6 Christs Natiuitie. 21 His Circumcision, 28 and 36 Simeon and Anna prophesie of Christ.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be || taxed.

Or, inrolled. 2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria.)

3 And all went to bee taxed, euery one into his owne citie.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galilee, out of the citie of Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the * citie of Dauid, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid,)

Iohn 7.42

5 To bee taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that shee should be deliuered.

7 And shee brought forth her first borne sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards abiding in the field, keeping ‖ watch ouer their flocke by night.

‖Or, the ni watches.

9 And loe the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the Angel said vnto them, feare not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great ioy, which shalbe to all people.

11 For vnto you is borne this day, in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe vnto you, ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swadling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the Angel a multitude of the heauenly hoste praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the Highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

15 And it came to passe, as the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, the shepheards saide one to another, Let vs now goe even vnto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come to passe, which the Lord hath made knowen vnto vs.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Ioseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And whē they had seene it, they made knowen abroad the saying, which was told them, concerning this childe.

18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, & pondred them in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seene, as it was told vnto them.

21 * And when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called * Iesus, which was so named of the Angel, before he was conceiued in the wombe.

*Gen. 17.
* Mat. 1. 2

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord,

23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Euery male that openeth the wombe, shall bee called holy to the Lord.)

* Exod. 13
num. 18. 1

.12.2,6 24 And to offer a sacrifice, according to * that which is said in the Law of the Lord, a payre of turtle Doues, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was iust and deuout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was reuealed vnto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene the Lords Christ.

27 And he came by the Spirit into the Temple: and when the parents brought in the childe Iesus to doe for him after the custome of the Law;

28 Then tooke hee him vp in his armes, and blessed God, and said;

29 Lord now lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation.

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the * fall and rising againe of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against,

Isay.8.14 n.9.32.

35 (Yea, a sword shall pearce thorow thy owne soule also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be reuealed.

36 And there was one Anna a Prophetesse, ♄ daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, & had liued with an husband seuen yeres from her virginity

37 And shee was a widow of about fourescore & foure yeeres, which departed not from the Temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she comming in that instant, gaue thankes likewise vnto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in || Hierusalem.

or, Israel.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisedome, & the grace of God was vpon him.

Deut.16.1.

41 Now his parents went to Hierusalem * euery yere, at the feast of the Passeouer.

42 And

42 And when he was twelue yeeres old, they went vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the Feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the childe Iesus tarried behind in Hierusalem, and Ioseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue beene in the company, went a dayes iourney, and they sought him among their kinsefolke and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they returned backe againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes they found him in the Temple, sitting in the middest of the Doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him, were astonished at his vnderstanding and answeres.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother sayd vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? Behold, thy father and I haue sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he sayd vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must be about my fathers business?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying which he spake vnto them.

51 And he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: But his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome and ‖ stature, and in fauour with God and man. ‖ Or, age

CHAP. III.

1 Iohns preaching & baptisme. 15 His testimony of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth him. 21 Christ is baptized. 23 His genealogie.

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high Priests, the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias, in the wildernesse.

3 * And he came into all the countrey about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sinnes, * Matth.

4 As it is written in the booke of the words of Esaias

i.40.3. the Prophet, saying, * The voyce of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare yee the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Every valley shall bee filled, and every mountaine and hill shall be brought low: and the crooked shall bee made straight, and the rough wayes shalbe made smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to
eth 3.7. bee baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

meet for. 8 Bring forth therefore fruits || worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selues, We haue Abraham to our father: For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

9 And now also the axe is layd vnto the roote of the trees: Every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall wee doe then?

n.2.15. 11 He answereth and saith vnto them, * He that hath
hn 3.17. two coates, let him impart to him that hath none, and he that hath meate, let him doe likewise.

12 Then came also Publicanes to bee baptized, and sayd vnto him, Master, what shall we doe?

13 And he said vnto them, Exact no more then that which is appoynted you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we doe? And he sayd vnto them,
, put no in feare. || Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be content with your || wages.

, allow- 15 And as the people were || in expectation, and all
in su- men || mused in their hearts of Iohn, whether he were the
ce. Christ or not:

, reasoned 16 Iohn answered, saying vnto them all, * I indeede
ebated. baptize you with water, but one mightier then I com-
tt 3.11. meth, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to vnloose, he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, & with fire.

17 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe he will burne with fire vnquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he vnto the people.

Matt. 14.3. 19 * But Herod the Tetrarch being reproued by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done:

20 Added

20 Added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, * and it came to passe that Iesus also being baptized, and praying, the heauen was opened: *Matt. 3.

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a Doue vpon him, and a voyce came from heauen, which sayd, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirty yeeres of age, being (as was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Heli,

24 Which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Leui, which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Janna, which was the sonne of Ioseph,

25 Which was the sonne of Mattathias, which was the sonne of Amos, which was the sonne of Naum, which was the sonne of Esli, which was the sonne of Nagge,

26 Which was the sonne of Maath, which was the sonne of Matthathias, which was the sonne of Semei, which was the son of Ioseph, which was the son of Iuda,

27 Which was the sonne of Ioanna, which was the sonne of Rhesa, which was the sonne of Zorobabel, which was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Neri,

28 Which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the sonne of Elmodam, which was the sonne of Er,

29 Which was the sonne of Iose, which was the sonne of Eliezer, which was the sonne of Iorim, which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Leui,

30 Which was the sonne of Simeon, which was the sonne of Iuda, which was the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Ionan, which was the sonne of Eliakim,

31 Which was the sonne of Melea, which was the son of Menam, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the sonne of Nathan, which was the sonne of Dauid,

32 Which was the sonne of Iesse, which was the sonne of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the sonne of Naasson,

33 Which was the sonne of Aminadab, which was the sonne of Aram, which was the sonne of Esrom, which was the sonne of Phares, which was the sonne of Iuda,

34 Which was the sonne of Iacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the sonne of Abraham, which was the sonne of Thara, which was the sonne of Nachor,

35 Which was the sonne of Saruch, which was the sonne of Ragau, which was the sonne Phaleg, which was the sonne of Heber, which was the sonne of Sala,

36 Which was the sonne of Cainan, which was the sonne of Arphaxad, which was the sonne of Sem, which was the sonne of Noe, which was the sonne of Lamech,

37 Which was the sonne of Mathusala, which was the sonne of Enoch, which was the sonne of Iared, which was the sonne of Maleleel, which was the sonne of Cainan,

38 Which was the sonne of Enos, which was the sonne of Seth, which was the sonne of Adam, which was the sonne of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christs temptation and fasting. 13 He ouercommeth the deuill, 14 beginneth to preach. 16 They of Nazareth admire him.

Ch. 4.1. AND Iesus being full of the holy Ghost, returned from Iordane, and was led by the Spirit into the wildernesse,

2 Being forte dayes tempted of the deuill, and in those dayes he did eate nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the deuill said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, that man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word of God.

5 And the deuill taking him vp into an high mountaine, shewed vnto him all the kingdomes of the world, in a moment of time.

6 And the deuill said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of them: for that is deliuered vnto me, and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt ¶ worship me, all shall be thine.

8 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

9 And he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.

10 For it is written, He shall giue his Angels charge ouer thee, to keepe thee,

11 And in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone.

12 And

12 And Jesus answering, said vnto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
13 And when the deuill had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.
14 ¶ And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.
15 And he taught in their Synagogues, being glorified of all.
16 ¶ And hee came to * Nazareth, where hee had beene brought vp, and as his custome was, he went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood vp for to reade. *Mat.13
17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the booke, hee found the place where it was written,
18 * The Spirit of the Lord is vpon me, because hee hath anoynted me, to preach the Gospel to the poore, he hath sent me to heale the broken hearted, to preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recouering of sight to the blinde, to set at liberty them that are bruised, *Esai.61
19 To preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.
20 And he closed the booke, & he gaue it againe to the minister, and sate downe: and the eyes of all them that were in the Synagogue, were fastened on him.
21 And hee began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.
22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondered at the gracious words, which proceeded out of his mouth. And they sayd, Is not this Ioseph's sonne?
23 And he said vnto them, Ye will surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physician heale thy selfe: Whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum, doe also heere in thy countrey.
24 And he sayd, Verily I say vnto you, No * Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey. *Mat.13
25 But I tell you of a trueth, * Many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heauen was shut vp three yeeres and sixe moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land; *1.Kin.17 *2.Kin.5
26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue vnto Sarepta, a citie of Sidon, vnto a woman that was a widow.
27 * And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elizeus the Prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saueing Naaman the Syrian

28 And

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard
these things, were filled with wrath;
29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, and led
him vnto the ||brow of the hill (whereon their citie was
built) that they might cast him downe headlong.
30 But he passing thorow the middest of them, went
his way:
31 And came downe to Capernaum, a citie of Galilee,
and taught them on the Sabbath dayes.
32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: *for his
word was with power.
33 ¶ *And in the Synagogue there was a man which
had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, and cryed out with a
lowde voyce,
34 Saying, ||Let vs alone, what haue we to doe with
thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy
vs? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.
35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace,
and come out of him. And when the deuill had thrown
him in the mids, he came out of him, and hurt him not.
36 And they were all amazed, and spake among them-
selues, saying, What a word is this? for with authoritie
and power he commandeth the vncleane spirits, and they
come out.
37 And the fame of him went out into euery place of
the countrey round about.
38 ¶ *And he arose out of the Synagogue, and entred
into Simons house: and Simons wiues mother was
taken with a great feuer, and they besought him for her.
39 And he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and
it left her. And immediatly she arose, and ministred vnto
them.
40 ¶ Now when the Sunne was setting, all they
that had any sicke with diuers diseases, brought them
vnto him: and he layd his hands on euery one of them
and healed them.
41 *And deuils also came out of many, crying out
and saying, Thou art Christ the Sonne of God. And
he rebuking them, suffered them not ||to speake: for they
knew that he was Christ.
42 And when it was day, he departed, and went into a
desert place: and the people sought him, and came vnto
him, and stayed him, that he should not depart frō them.
43 And he layd vnto them, I must preach the King-
dome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.
44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP.

*edge.

*Luke 7.29.

*Mar. 1.23.

*away.

*Luke 8.14.

*Luke 1.34.

*to say
they
w him to
Christ.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth out of the ship. 4 A miraculous draught of fishes. 12 The leper cleansed. 18 The pallie healed. 27 Matthew called.

1 AND * it came to passe that as the people preassed vpon him to heare the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genezareth, *Matt. 4.

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And hee entred into one of the ships, which was Simons, and prayed him, that he would thrust out a little from the land, and he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he sayd vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, and let downe your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering, said vnto him, Master, we haue toyled all the night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheleſſe at thy word, I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake:

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sinke.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken

10 And so was also James, and John the sonnes of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus sayd vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ * And it came to passe, when he was in a certaine citie, behold, a man full of leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. *Matt. 8.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but goe and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according

according as Moses commanded, for a testimony vnto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himselfe into the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which were come out of euery towne of Galilee, and Iudea, and Hierusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heale them.

Matth. 9.2. 18 ¶ * And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went vpon the house top, and let him downe thorow the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Iesus.

20 And when hee saw their faith, he sayd vnto him: Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but God alone?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their thoughts, he answering, sayd vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Rise vp and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power vpon earth to forgiue sinnes (he saith vnto the sicke of the palsie,) I say vnto thee, Arise, & take vp thy couch, and goe into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose vp before them, and tooke vp that whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with feare, saying, We haue seene strange things to day.

Matth. 9.9. 27 ¶ * And after these things he went foorth, and saw a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receipt of Custome: and he said vnto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 And Leui made him a great feast in his owne house: and there was a great company of Publicans and of others that sate downe with them.

30 But the Scribes and Pharisees murmured against

gainst his disciples, saying, Why doe yee eate and drinke with Publicanes and sinners?

31 And Iesus answering, sayd vnto them, They that are whole, neede not a Physician: but they that are sicke.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said vnto him, * Why doe the disciples of Iohn fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees: but thine eate and drinke. * Matt. 9.

34 And he said vnto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the Bridegroome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegroome shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable vnto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment vpon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into olde bottles: else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserued.

39 No man also hauing drunke old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Touching the eares of corne that were plucked by the disciples on the Sabbath. 13 Christ chuseth the twelue. 17 He healeth, 20 and preacheth.

AND * it came to passe on the second Sabbath after the first that hee went thorow the corne fields: and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, rubbing them in their hands. * Mar. 12.

2 And certaine of the Pharisees said vnto them, Why doe ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 And Iesus answering them, said, Haue ye not read so much as this, what Dauid did, when himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eate the Shewbred, and gaue also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eate but for the Priestes alone?

5 And he said vnto them, That the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

6 * And

Mat.12.9. 6 * And it came to passe also on another Sabbath, that
hee entred into the Synagogue, and taught: and there
was a man whose right hand was withered.
7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him whe-
ther he would heale on the Sabbath day: that they might
finde an accusation against him.
8 But hee knew their thoughts, and said to the man
which had the withered hand, Rise vp, and stand foorth
in the mids. And he rose, and stood foorth.
9 Then said Jesus vnto them, I will aske you one
thing, Is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good,
or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy it?
10 And looking round about vpon them all, hee sayd
vnto the man, Stretch foorth thy hand. And he did so:
and his hand was restored whole as the other.
11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed
one with another what they might doe to Jesus.
12 And it came to passe in these dayes, that hee went
out into a mountaine to pray, and continued all night in
prayer to God.
13 ¶ And when it was day, he called vnto him his dis-
Mat.10.1. ciples: * and of them he chose twelue; whom also hee na-
med Apostles.
14 Simon (whom hee also called Peter) and An-
drew his brother: James and Iohn, Philip and Bar-
tholomew,
15 Matthew and Thomas, James the sonne of Al-
phens, and Simon called Zelotes,
Iude 1. 16 And Judas * the brother of James, and Judas Is-
cariot, which also was the traitour.
17 ¶ And he came downe with them, and stood in the
plaine, and the company of his Disciples, and a great
multitude of people out of all Judea and Hierusalem,
and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came
to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases,
18 And they that were vexed with vncleane spirits:
and they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for
there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.
20 And hee lifted vp his eyes on his Disciples, and
said, * Blessed bee ye poore: for yours is the kingdome
Mat.5.3. God.
21 Blessed are yee that hunger now: for ye shall be fil-
led, Blessed are ye that weepe now: for ye shall laugh.
22 Blessed are yee when men shall hate you and when
they shall separate you from their company, and shall re-
proch

proch you, and cast out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce yee in that day, and leape for ioy: for behold, your reward is great in heauen: for in the like maner did their fathers vnto the Prophets.

24 * But woe vnto you that are rich, for yee haue receiued your consolation. * Amos 6

25 * Woe vnto you, that are full, for yee shall hunger, Woe vnto you that laugh now: for yee shall mourne and weepe. * Isai. 64

26 Woe vnto you, when all men shall speake well of you: for so did their fathers vnto the false prophets.

27 ¶ * But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies, doe good to them which hate you, * Mat. 5.

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully vse you.

29 * And vnto him that smiteth thee on the one cheeke, offer also the other: * & him that taketh away thy cloake, forbid not to take thy coate also. * Mat. 5 * 1. Cor.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

31 * And as you would that men should doe to you, doe ye also to them likewise. * Mat. 7. tob. 4.

32 * For if yee loue them that loue you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also loue those that loue them. * Mat 5.

33 * And if ye doe good to them which doe good to you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also doe euen the same.

34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receiue what thanke haue ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receiue as much againe. * Mat. 5.

35 But loue yee your enemies, and doe good, and lend, hoping for nothing againe: and your reward shall bee great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kinde vnto the vnthankefull, and to the euill.

36 Bee yee therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

37 * Iudge not, and ye shall not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and yee shall be forgiuen. * Mat. 7.

38 Giue, and it shall be giuen vnto you, good measure pressed downe, and shaken together, and running ouer, shall men giue vnto your bosome: for with the same measure that yee mete withall, it shall bee measured to you againe.

39 And he spake a parable vnto them, * Can the blind leade the blind? Shall they not both fall into the ditch? * Mat. 15

40 * The

Mat.10.24 40 * The disciple is not aboue his master: but euery
, shall bee one || that is perfect, shall be as his master.
fected as 41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy
aster. brothers eye, but perceiuest not the beame that is in thine
Mat.7.3. owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let mee pull out the mote that is in thine eye: when thou thy selfe beholdest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

Mat.7.16 43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doeth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruit: for of thornes men doe not gather figges, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is euill: For of the abundance of the heart, his mouth speaketh.

Mat.7.12. 46 ¶ * And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and doe not the things which I say?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to mee, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like,

48 He is like a man, which built an house, and digged deepe, and laide the foundation on a rocke. And when the flood arose, the streame beat vehemently vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded vpon a rocke.

49 But hee that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house vpon the earth: against which the streame did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Centurions faith, 10 Christ healeth his seruant being absent, 11 Raiseth the widowes sonne, 24 Christ testimony of Iohn.

Mat.8.5. NOw when hee had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruant, who was deare vnto him, was sicke, and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that hee would come and heale his seruant.

4 And

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That hee was worthy for whom hee should doe this.

5 For he loueth our nation, and hee hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when hee was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say in a word, and my seruant shalbe healed.

8 For I also am a man set vnder authority, hauing vnder me souldiers: and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and hee commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, hee marueiled at him, and turned him about, and said vnto the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the seruant whole that had beene sick.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that hee went into a city called Naim: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when hee came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the onely sonne of his mother, and shee was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And hee came and touched the ‖ biere (and they that bare him, stood still.) And hee said, Young man, I say vnto thee, Arise. ‖ Or, a coffin

15 And he that was dead sate vp, and began to speake and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great Prophet is risen vp among vs, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout al Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 * And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things. * Mat. 11.

19 ¶ And Iohn calling vnto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or looke we for another?

20 When the men were come vnto him, they sayde, John Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or looke we for another?

21 And in that same houre hee cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many that were blinde, he gaue sight.

22 And Iesus answering said vnto them, Goe your way, and tell John what things ye haue seene and heard how that the blinde see, the lame walke, the leapers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, to the poore the Gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is hee whosoeuer shall not bee offended in mee.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speake vnto the people concerning John: What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reede shaken with the wind?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and liue dilicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what wene ye out for to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you: and much more then a Prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, Among those that are borne of women, there is not a greater Prophet then John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the Publicanes, iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of John:

30 But the Pharisees and Lawyers || reiected the counsell of God || against themselues, being not baptized of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and what are they like?

32 They are like vnto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: wee haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For John the Baptist cane, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, eating and drinking, and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners.

35 But

r, frustra-

r, within mselues.

Mat 11.16

35 But wisdome is iustified of all her children.

36 ¶ * But one of the Pharisees desired him that hee would eate with him. And hee went into the Pharisees house, and sate downe to meat, * Mar. 14

37 And behold, a woman in the city which was a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sate at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an Alabaster box of oyntment;

38 And stood at his feete behind him, weeping, and began to wash his feet with teares, and did wipe them with the haires of her head, and kissed his feet, and anoynted them with the oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, hee spake within himselfe, saying, This man, if he were a Prophet would haue knowen who, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, sayd vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And hee saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine creditour, which had two debtors: the one ought fiue hundred ‖ pence, and the other fiftie. ‖ S. & M. 18, 28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankely forgaue them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will loue him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose, that he to whom hee forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast rightly iudged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gauest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gauest mee no kisse: but this woman since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyle thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, Her sinnes which are many, are forgiuen, for shee loued much: but to whom little is forgiuen, the same loueth little.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen.

49 And they that sate at meat with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that forgiueth sinnes also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee, goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

2 Women minister to Christ. 4 The parable of the sower, 16 and of the candle. 26 The Legion of deuils.

AND it came to passe afterward, that hee went throwout euery city and village preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdome of God: and the twelue were with him,

2 And certaine women which had beene healed of euill spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene,* out of whom went seuen diuils,

Mat.16.9

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 ¶ * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of euery city, hee spake by a parable:

Mat.13.2.

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was troden downe, and the foules of the ayre deuoured it.

6 And some fell vpon a rocke, and assoone as it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thornes, & the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang vp, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when hee had said these things, he cried, he that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable bee?

10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know the mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in parables, that seeing they might not see; and hearing, they might not vnderstand.

Mat.13.18

11 * Now the parable is this: the seede is the word of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare: then commeth the Diuell, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

13 They on the Rocke, are they which when they heare, receiue the word with ioy, and these haue no roote, which for a while beleeue, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which when they haue heard, goe forth, and are choked with cares, and riches, & pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest

honest and good heart hauing heard the word, keepe it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ * No man when hee hath lighted a candle, couereth it with a vessell, or putteth it vnder a bed: but setteth it on a candlesticke, that they which enter in, may see the light. *Matt.5

17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not bee made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not bee knowen, and come abroad. *Mat.10

18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: * for whosoeuer hath, to him shalbe giuen; and whosoeuer hath not, from him shalbe taken, euen that which he || seemeth to haue. *Mat.1 ||Or, thi that he

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother, and his brethren, and could not come at him for the preasse. *Mat.1

20 And it was told him by certaine, which sayd, Thy mother & thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered and said vnto them, My mother and my brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it.

22 ¶ * Now it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a shippe with his Disciples: and he said vnto them, Let vs goe ouer to the other side of the lake, and they launched forth. *Matt.8

23 But as they sayled, hee fell asleepe, and there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in leopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he rose, and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calme.

25 And he sayd vnto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondred, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? For hee commandeth euen the windes and water, and they obey him,

26 ¶ * And they arriued at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galilee. *Matt.8

27 And when hee went forth to land, there met him out of the Citie a certaine man which had deuils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombes.

28 When hee saw Iesus, hee cryed out, and fell downe before him, and with a loud voyce sayd, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For hee had commanded the vncleane spirit to come out of the man: For oftentimes it had caught him,

and he was kept bound with chaines, and in fetters: and hee brake the bands, and was driuen of the deuill into the wildernesse.)

30 And Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that hee would not command them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an herde of many swine feeding on the mountaine: and they besought him that hee would suffer them to enter into them: and hee suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herde ranne violently downe a steepe place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fedde them saw what was done, they fledde, and went and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what meanes he that was possessed of the deuils, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought them to depart from them, for they were taken with great feare: and he went vp into the ship, and returned backe againe.

38 Now the man out of whom the deuils were departed besought him that he might bee with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne to thine owne house, and shew how great things God hath done vnto thee. And hee went his way, and published throughout the whole Citie how great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Iesus was returned, the people gladly receiued him: for they were all waiting for him.

Mat. 9. 18. 41 ¶ And behold, there came a man, named Iairus, and he was a ruler of the Synagogue, and he fell downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one onely daughter about twelue yeeres of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman hauing an issue of blood twelue

yeeres,

yeeres, which had spent all her lining vpon Physicians, neither could be healed of any;

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Iesus said, Who touched mee? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and preasse thee, and sayest thou, Who touched mee?

46 And Iesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that shee was not hid, she came trembling, and falling downe before him, shee declared vnto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly.

48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace.)

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there commeth one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not, beleeue onely, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when hee came into the house, hee suffered no man to goe in, saue Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he said, Weepe not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorne, knowing that shee was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and called, saying, Maide, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and shee arose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth foorth his Apostles. 9 Herod is desirous to see Christ. 28 The transfiguration. 37 The lunaticke.

THen * hee called his twelue Disciples together, and gaue them power and authority ouer all deuils, and to cure diseases. * Mat

2 And he sent them to preach the Kingdome of God, and to heale the sicke.

3 And hee sayd vnto them, Take nothing for your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither haue two coates apiece.

4 And whatsoeuer house yee enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoeuer will not receiue you, when yee goe out of that citie, shake off the very dust from your feete, for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the townes, preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

2.14.1. 7 ¶ * Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and hee was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen from the dead:

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old Prophets was risen againe.

9 And Herod said, Iohn haue I beheaded: but who is this of whom I heare such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the Apostles when they were returned, told
14.13. him all that they had done. * And hee tooke them, and went aside priuately into a desert place, belonging to the citie, called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him, and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede of healing.

14.15. 12 * And when the day began to weare away, then came the twelue, and said vnto him, Send the multitude away, that they may goe into the townes and countrey round about and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, Wee haue no more but fiue loaues & two fishes, except we should goe and buy meate for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thousand men. And hee said to his disciples, Make them to sit downe by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit downe.

16 Then hee tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looking vp to heauen, he blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eate, and were all filled. And there was taken vp of fragments that remayned to them, twelue baskets.

6.13. 18 ¶ * And it came to passe, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and hee asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering, said, Iohn the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old Prophets is risen againe.

20 Yee

20 Hee said vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? Peter answering, saith, The Christ of God.
21 And hee straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing,
22 Saying, * The Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders, and chiefe Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised the third day. *Mat. 17. 2
23 ¶ * And hee sayd vnto them all, If any man will come after mee, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse daily, and follow me. *Mat. 10. 3
24 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, ‖ same shal saue it.
25 * For what is a man aduantaged, if hee gaine the whole world, and lose himselfe, or be cast away? *Mat. 16. 2 marke 8. 3
26 * For whosoeuer shalbe ashamed of mee, and of my words, of him shall the Sonne of man bee ashamed, when hee shall come in his owne glory, and in his Fathers, and of the holy Angels. *Mat. 10. 3
27 * But I tell you of a trueth, There be some standing heere, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdome of God. *Mat. 16. 2
28 ¶ * And it came to passe, about an eight dayes after these ‖ sayings, he tooke Peter, and John, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray: *Matt. 17. ‖ Or, things.
29 And as hee prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his rayment was white and glistering.
30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias.
31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.
32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.
33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here, & let vs make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.
34 While hee thus spake, there came a cloude, and ouershadowed them, and they feared as they entred into the cloude.
35 And there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, heare him.
36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone, and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.
37 ¶ * And it came to passe that on the next day, when *Mat. 17. 1

they

they were come down from the hill, much people met him.
38 And behold, a man of the company cryed out, saying, Master, I beseech thee looke vpon my sonne, for hee is mine onely childe.
39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly cryeth out, and it teareth him that hee fometh againe, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.
40 And I besought thy Disciples to cast him out, and they could not.
41 And Iesus answering, said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.
42 And as he was yet a comming, the deuill threw him downe, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the childe, and deliuered him againe vnto his father.
43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred euery one at all things which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples,
Mat. 17. 22. 44 * Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares: for the Sonne of man shall bee deliuered into the hands of men.
45 But they vnderstood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceiued it not: and they feared to aske him of that saying.
Mat. 18. 1. Marke 9. 34. 46 ¶ * Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.
47 And Iesus perceiuing the thought of their heart, tooke a childe, and set him by him,
48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer shall receiue this childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth him that sent me. For hee that is least among you all, the same shall be great.
Mar. 9. 38. 49 ¶ * And Iohn answered, and said, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followeth not with vs.
50 And Iesus said vnto him, Forbid him not: for hee that is not against vs, is for vs.
51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be receiued vp, hee stedfastly set his face to goe to Hierusalem,
52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.
53 And they did not receiue him, because his face was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And

54 And when his Disciples, James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come downe from heauen, and consume them, euen as *Elias did? *2. King. 1. 10.

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Yee know not what maner spirit ye are of.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ *And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man sayd vnto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoeuer thou goest. *Matt. 8. 1

58 And Iesus said vnto him, Foxes haue holes, and birds of the ayre haue nests, but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 *And he said to another, Follow me: But he said, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my father. *Matt. 8. 2

60 Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou and preach the kingdome of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first goe bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man hauing put his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fit for the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 The seuenty disciples, 17 admonished to be humble. 41 Martha reprehended, and Mary commended.

After *these things, the Lord appointed other seuentie also, and sent them two and two before his face, into euery Citie and place, whither hee himselfe would come. *Matt. 10.

2 Therefore said he vnto them, *The harueſt truely is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harueſt, that he would send forth labourers into his harueſt. *Matt. 9.

3 Goe your wayes: *Behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolues. *Mat 10.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

5 *And into whatsoeuer house yee enter, first say, Peace be to this house. *Mat. 10.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon it: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in the same house remaine, eating and drinking

king such things as they giue: For the labourer is worthy of his hire. Goe not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoeuer citie ye enter, and they receiue you, eate such things as are set before you.

9 And heale the sicke that are therein, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer citie ye enter, and they receiue you not, goe your wayes out into the streetes of the same, and say,

11 Euen the very dust of your citie which cleaueth on vs, we doe wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be yee sure of this, that the kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

12 But I say vnto you, That it shalbe more tolerable in that day for Sodome, then for that citie.

Mat.11.21. 13 * Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: For if the mighty works had bene done in Tyre and Sidon, which haue beene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the Iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

Mat.10.40 16 * Hee that heareth you, heareth mee: and hee that despiseth you, despiseth mee: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seuenty returned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subiect vnto vs through thy Name.

18 And he sayd vnto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heauen.

19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to tread on serpents, and scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie: and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subiect vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ In that houre Iesus reioyced in spirit, and sayd, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes: euen so Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight.

Many ancient copies adde these words, and turning to his disciples sayd.

22 ‖ All things are deliuered to me of my Father, and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: and who the Father is, but the Sonne, and hee to whom the Sonne will reueale him.

23 ¶ And

23 ¶ And he turned him vnto his Disciples, and said priuately, * Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see. *Mat. 13.1

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets, and Kings haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him, saying, * Master, what shall I doe to inherite eternall life? He said vnto him, * Mat. 22.

26 What is written in the Law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde, and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 And he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answering, said, A certaine man went downe from Ierusalem to Iericho, & fell among theeues, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 And by chance there came downe a certaine Priest that way, and when hee saw him, hee passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Leuite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certaine Samaritane as he iourneyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him.

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, powring in oyle and wine, and set him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and tooke care of him.

35 And on the morrow when hee departed, hee tooke out two || pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, & whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will repay thee. || See Mat. 20.2.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that hee entred into a certaine village: and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And

39 And shee had a sister called Mary, which also sate at Iesus feete, and heard his word:

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to him, and said, Lord, doest thou not care that my sister hath left mee to serue alone? Bid her therefore that shee helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull & troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needefull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not bee taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray instantly. 14 Hee casteth out a dumbe deuill. 29 Hee preacheth to the people, 37 and reprooueth the Pharisees, and Lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

Mat. 6. 9. 2 And hee said vnto them, When yee pray, say, *Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed bee thy Name. Thy kingdome come, Thy will bee done, as in heaven, so in earth.

Or, for the 3. 3 Giue vs || day by day our dayly bread.

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for wee also forgiue euery one that is indebted to vs. And leade vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill.

5 And he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall goe vnto him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues,

r, out of ay. 6 For a friend of mine || in his iourney is come to me, and I haue nothing to set before him:

7 And hee from within shall answere and say, Trouble mee not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue thee.

8 I say vnto you, Though hee will not rise and giue him, because hee is his friend: yet because of his importunity, he will rise and giue him as many as he needeth.

Mat. 7. 7. 9 *And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall bee giuen you: seeke, and ye shall find: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you.

10 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall bee opened.

Mat. 7. 9. 11 *If a sonne aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? Or if he aske a fish, will he for a fish giue him a serpent?

12 Or

12 Or if hee shall aske an egge, will hee offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your children; how much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Spirit to them that aske him?

14 ¶ And hee was casting out a deuill, and it was dumbe. And it came to passe, when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake, and the people wondered.

15 But some of them sayde, * Hee casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils. * Mat.9.34 and 12.24.

16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heauen.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said vnto them, Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and a house diuided against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also bee diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome stand? Because ye say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your sonnes cast them out? Therefore shall they bee your iudges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out deuils, no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his place, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger then he shall come vpon him, and ouercome him, hee taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoyles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 * When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh thorow dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, hee saith, I will returne vnto my house whence I came out. * Mat.12.4

26 And when hee commeth, hee findeth it swept and garnished.

25 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 And it came to passe as hee spake these things a certaine woman of the company lift vp her voyce, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that heare the word of God and keepe it.

29 ¶ And

Mat.12.38 29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is an euill generation, they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen it, but the signe of Ionas the Prophet;

30 For as Ionas was a signe vnto the Ninuites, so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with the men of this generation, & condemne them: for shee came from the vtmost parts of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Solomon: and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineue shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

Mat.5.15. See Mat. .15. 33 * No man when hee hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither vnder a || bushell, but on a candlesticke, that they which come in, may see the light.

Mat.6.22 34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is euill, thy body also is full of darkenesse.

35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, hauing no part darke, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doeth giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as hee spake, a certaine Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe to meate.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, hee marueiled that he had not first washed before dinner.

Mat.23.25 39 * And the Lord said vnto him, Now doe ye Pharisees make cleane the outside of the cuppe and the platter: but your inward part is full of rauening and wickednes.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

Or, as you are able. 41 But rather giue almes of such things || as you haue: and behold, all things are cleane vnto you.

42 But woe vnto you Pharisees: for ye tyth Mint and Rue, and all manner of herbes, and passe ouer iudgement, and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

Mat.23.6 43 * Woe vnto you Pharisees, for yee loue the vppermost seates in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Woe

44 Woe vnto you Scribes & Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and sayd, vnto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest vs also.

46 *And he sayd, Woe vnto you also ye Lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, & ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. *Mat. 23.

47 *Woe vnto you, for yee build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them. *Mat. 23.2

48 Truely yee beare witnesse that ye allow the deedes of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, and some of them they shall slay, and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may bee required of this generation,

51 *From the blood of Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias, which perished betweene the Altar and the Temple: verily I say vnto you, It shall be required of this generation. *Gen. 4.8.

52 *Woe vnto you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: yee entred not in your selues, and them that were entring in, ye || hindred. *Mat. 23. ||Or, forbad

53 And as he said these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharisees began to vrge him vehemently, and to prouoke him to speake of many things:

54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 To auoyde hypocrisie and fearefulnesse in publishing Christs doctrine. 17 to beware of couetousnesse. 41 The faithfull and wise steward.

IN the meane time, when there was gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one vpon another, he began to say vnto his disciples first of all, Beware yee of the leuen of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie. *Mat. 16.

2 *For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuealed, neither hid, that shall not be knowen. *Mat. 10.2

3 Therefore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darkenes, shall be heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, in closets, shall bee proclaimed vpon the house tops.

Mat.10.28 4 * And I say vnto you my friends, Bee not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, haue no more that they can doe.

5 But I will forewarne you whom yee shall feare: Feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea: I say vnto you. Feare him.

See Matt. 10.29. 6 Are not five sparrowes sold for two|| farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But euen the very haires of your head are all numbred: Feare not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrowes.

Mat.10.32 2.tim.2.12. 8 * Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse mee before men, him shall the Sonne of man also confesse before the Angels of God.

9 But he that denieth mee before men, shall be denied before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgiuen him: but vnto him that blasphemeth against ye holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen.

Mat.10.19 11 * And when they bring you into the Synagogues, and vnto Magistrates, and powers, take ye not thought how or what thing yee shall answere, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said vnto him, Master, speake to my brother that hee diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made me a Iudge, or a diuider ouer you.

15 And hee said vnto them, Take heede and beware of couetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And hee spake a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And hee thought within himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no roome where to bestow my fruites?

18 And hee sayd, This will I doe, I will pull down my barnes, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods layd vp for many yeeres, take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

† Gr. doe they require thy soule. 20 But God sayd vnto him, Thou foole, this night † thy soule shall bee required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast prouided?

21 So

21 So is he that layeth vp treasure for himselfe, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he said vnto his Disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what yee shall eate, neither for your body, what ye shall put on. *Mat. 6.

23 The life is more then meate, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider ye rauens, for they neither sow nor reape, which neither haue storehouse nor barne, and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then the foules?

25 And which of you with taking thought, can adde to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing that is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the Lilies how they growe, they toyle not; they spinne not: and yet I say vnto you, That Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so cloath the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the ouen: how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seeke not ye what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke, ‖ neither be of doubtfull minde: ‖ Or, liue in carefull suspence.

30 For all these things doe the nations of the world seeke after: and your Father knoweth that ye haue neede of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seeke yee the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

32 Feare not, little flocke; for it is your Fathers good pleasure to giue you the kingdome.

33 Sell that yee haue, and giue almes: * prouide your selues bags which waxe not olde, and treasure in the heauens that faileth not, where no theeke approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. * Mat. 6.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 * Let your loynes be girded about, and your lights burning, * 1. Pet. 1.

36 And yee your selues like vnto men that waite for their Lord, when he will returne from the wedding, that when he commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom the Lord when he commeth, shal finde watching: Verily, I say vnto you, That hee shall gird himselfe, and make them sit downe to meate, and will come foorth and serue them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in

the third watch, & find them so, blessed are those seruants.

t. 24 43 39 *And this know, that if the goodman of the house had knowen what houre the thiefe would come, hee would haue watched, and not haue suffered his house to be broken thorow.

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Sonne of man commeth at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said vnto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen vnto all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them their portion of meate in due season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a trueth I say vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But and if that seruant say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming: & shall begin to beate the men seruants, and maidens, & to eate & drinke, & to be drunken:

46 The Lord of that seruant wil come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an houre, when he is not ware, and will ‖ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

cut him

47 And that seruant which knew his Lords will, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But hee that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shall be much required, and to whom men haue committed much, of him they will aske the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I haue a Baptisme to bee baptized with, and how am I ‖ straitned till it be accomplished?

pained.

t. 10. 34 51 *Suppose yee that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, Nay, but rather diuision.

52 For from henceforth there shall bee fiue in one house diuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be diuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against the daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

tt. 16. 2. 54 ¶ And he sayd also vnto the people, *When ye see a cloud

clouds rise out of the West, straightway yee say, There commeth a showre, and so it is.

55 And when yee see the South winde blow, yee say, There will be heate, and it commeth to passe.

56 Yee hypocrites, yee can discerne the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it that yee doe not discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why euen of your selues iudge yee not what is right?

58 ¶ When thou goest with thine aduersary to the Magistrate, as thou art in the way, giue diligence that thou mayest be deliuered from him, lest he haie thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer thee to the Officer, and the Officer cast thee into prison. * Mat. 5.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the very last || mite. || See Ma 12. 32.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance vpon the punishment of the Galileans and others. 6 The figge tree cursed. 24 The straite gate.

There were present at that season, some that tolde him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose yee that these Galileans were sinners aboue all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteene, vpon whom the towre of Siloe fell, and slew them, thinke ye that they were || sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Ierusalem. || Or, de

5 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figge tree planted in his vineyard, and hee came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three yeeres I come seeking fruit on this figge tree, and finde none: cut it downe, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it beare fruit, well; and if not, then after that, thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And hee was teaching in one of the Synagogues, on the Sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteene yeeres, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift vp her selfe.

12 And when Iesus saw her, hee called her to him, and said vnto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy infirmity.

13 And he laid his handes on her, and immediatly shee was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and sayd vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doeth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, loe these eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when hee had said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: and all the people reioyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

Mar. 13. 31. 18 ¶ * Then sayd he, Vnto what is the kingdome of God like? and wherevnto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowles of the ayre lodged in the branches of it.

20 And againe he sayd, Wherevnto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leauen which a woman tooke and hid in three ‖ measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

See Matth. 13. 22 * And hee went thorow the cities and villages, teaching and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

Matt. 9. 35.

23 Then sayd one vnto him, Lord, are there few that be saued? And he sayd vnto them,

Matt. 7. 13. 24 ¶ * Striue to enter in at the strait gate: for many I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the master of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, and hee shall answere, and say vnto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall yee begin to say, Wee haue eaten and drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

27 * But

27 * But he shal say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are; Depart from me all ye workers of iniquity. *Mat. 7. 2

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth, when yee shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the Kingdome of God, and you your selues thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shal sit downe in the Kingdome of God.

30 * And behold, there are last, which shall bee first and there are first, which shall be last. *Mat. 19.

31 ¶ The same day there came certaine of the Pharisees, saying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe ye and tell that Fox, Behold, I cast out deuils, and I doe cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Neuertheleſſe, I must walke to day, & to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot bee that a Prophet perish out of Hierusalem.

34 * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as a henne doth gather her broode vnder her wings, and yee would not? *Mat. 23

35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate. And verily I say vnto you, Ye shall not see me, vntill the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 The dropsie healed on the Sabbath. 15 The parable of the great Supper. 25 Who cannot be Christs disciples.

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chiefe Pharisees, to eate bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched him,

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 And Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And hee tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe;

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall haue an Asse or an Oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when hee marked how they chose out the chiefe roomes, saying vnto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not downe in the highest roome: lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him,

9 And hee that bade thee and him, come, and say to thee, Giue this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest roome.

u.25.5. 10 * But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee commeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, get vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

t.23.12 11 * For whosoever exalteth himselfe, shall be abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said hee also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsemen, nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence bee made thee.

.47. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poore, the maymed, the lame, the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meate with

l.19.9 him, heard these things, he said vnto him, * Blessed is he that shall eate bread in the kingdome of God.

.22.2. 16 * Then said he vnto him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many:

17 * And sent his seruant at supper time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a piece of ground, and I must needes goe and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goe to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife: and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said

to

to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 And the Lord said vnto the seruant, goe out into the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my Supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned and said vnto them,

26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his owne life also, he cannot be my disciple. * Mat. 10.

27 And whosoeuer doth not beare his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a towre, sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that beholde it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what King going to make warre against another King, sitteth not downe first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, hee sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 ¶ * Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his lauour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? * Matt. 5.

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill: but men cast it out. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheepe. 8 Of the piece of siluer. 11 Of the prodigall sonne.

THen drew neere vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, for to heare him.

2 And the Pharises and and Scribes murmured, saying, This man receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And

3 ¶ And he spake this parable vnto them, saying,
t.18.12 4 *What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of them, doeth not leaue the ninety and nine in the wildernesse, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he finde it?
5 And when hee hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders, reioycing.
6 And when hee commeth home, hee calleth together his friends, and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me, for I haue found my sheepe which was lost:
7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in heauen ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer ninety and nine iust persons, which neede no repentance.
8 ¶ Either what woman hauing ten || pieces of siluer, if she lose one piece, doeth not light a candle, & sweepe the house, and seeke diligently, till she finde it?
9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Reioyce with me, for I haue found the piece which I had lost.
10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner that repenteth.
11 ¶ And he said, A certaine man had two sonnes:
12 And the yonger of them said to his father, Father, giue me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he diuided vnto them his liuing.
13 And not many dayes after, the yonger sonne gathered all together, and tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there wasted his substance with riotous liuing.
14 And when hee had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.
15 And hee went & ioyned himselfe to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him into his fields to feede swine.
16 And hee would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes that the swine did eate: and no man gaue vnto him.
17 And when he came to himselfe, he sayd, How many hired seruants of my fathers haue bread enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger?
18 I will arise and goe to my father, and will say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen and before thee,
19 And am no more worthy to bee called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruants.
20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neeke, and kissed him.
21 And

*rachma translates piece of r, is the part of nnee, h comes to seuen halfe- and is ll to the ne peny, .18 28.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 But the father said to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shooes on his feete,

23 And bring hither the fatted calfe, and kill it, and let vs eate and be merry.

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue againe: he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder sonne was in the field, and as hee came and drew nigh to the house, hee heard musicke and dancing.

26 And he called one of the seruants, and asked what these things meant?

27 And he sayd vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound.

28 And hee was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29 And hee answering, sayd to his father, Loe, these many yeeres doe I serue thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But assoone as this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy liuing with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calfe.

31 And he sayd vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue is thine.

32 It was meete that we should make merry, and bee glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Of the vniust Steward. 14 The hypocrisie of the couetous Pharisees reprooued. 19 The rich glutton and Lazarus.

AND he said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused vnto him, that he had wasted his goods.

2 And hee called him, and sayd vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himselfe, What shall I doe, for my lord taketh away from mee the Stewardship? I cannot digge, to begge I am ashamed.

4 I am resolued what to doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.
5 So he called euery one of his lords debtors vnto him, and said vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my lord?
6 And he said, An hundred || measures of oyle. And he said vnto him, Take thy bill and sit downe quickly and write fiftie.
7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And hee said, An hundred || measures of wheate. And he said vnto him, Take thy bill and write fourescore.
8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.
9 And I say vnto you, Make to your selues friends of the || Mammon of vnrighteousnesse, that when yee faile, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations.
10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much.
11 If therefore yee haue not beene faithfull in the vnrighteous || Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?
12 And if ye haue not beene faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall giue you that which is your owne?
13 ¶ * No seruant can serue two masters, for either he will hate the one, and loue the other: or else hee will hold to the one, and despise the other: yee cannot serue God and Mammon.
14 And the Pharisees also who were couetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.
15 And he said vnto them, Ye are they which iustifie your selues before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.
16 * The Law and the Prophets were vntill Iohn: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preasseth into it.
17 * And it is easier for heauen and earth to passe, then one title of the Law to faile.
18 * Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.
19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed

The word
tus in the
ginall, con-
neth nine
ons three
ets.
e word
interpre-
a mea-
, in the
inall, con-
eth about
beene
ls and
tle.
riches.
riches.

tt.6.24.

t.11.12

t.5.18.

t.5.32.

clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously
euery day.
20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus,
which was laid at his gate full of sores,
21 And desiring to be fedde with the crummes which
fell from the rich mans table: moreouer the dogs came
and licked his sores.
22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was
caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich
man also died, and was buried.
23 And in hell he lift vp his eyes, being in torments,
and seeth Abraham afarre off, & Lazarus in his bosome:
24 And he cryed, and said, Father Abraham, haue
mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip
of his finger in water, and coole my tongue, for I am tor-
mented in this flame.
25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou
in thy life time receiuedst thy good things, and likewise
Lazarus euill things, but now he is comforted, and thou
art tormented.
26 And beside all this, betweene vs and you there is
a great gulfe fixed, so that they which would passe from
hence to you, cannot; neither can they passe to vs, that
would come from thence.
27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that
thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:
28 For I haue fiue brethren, that he may testifie vnto
them, lest they also come vnto this place of torment.
29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue Moses and
the Prophets, let them heare them.
30 And hee said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one
went vnto them from the dead, they will repent.
31 And hee said vnto him, If they heare not Moses
and the Prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though
one rise from the dead.

CHAP. XVII

1 To auoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgiue another.
6 The power of faith. 11 The ten lepers.

Then sayd he vnto the Disciples, * It is impossible
but that offences will come, but wo vnto him through
whom they come. * Matt. 18.
2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged
about his necke, and hee cast into the Sea, then that hee
should offend one of these little ones.
3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: * If thy brother tres- * Mat. 18.
passe

trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if hee repent, forgiue him.

4 And if hee trespasse against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgiue him.

5 And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our Faith.

Mat. 17. 20 6 *And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a graine of mustard seed, ye might say vnto this Sycamine tree, Be thou plucked vp by the roote, and bee thou planted in the sea, and it should obey you.

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say vnto him by and by when hee is come from the field, Goe and sit downe to meate?

8 And will not rather say vnto him, Make readie wherewith I may sup, and gird thy selfe, and serue mee, till I haue eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eate and drinke.

9 Doeth he thanke that seruant, because he did the things that were commanded him? I trowe not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee shall haue done all those things which are commanded you, say, Wee are vnprofitable seruants: wee haue done that which was our duetie to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went to Hierusalem, that he passed thorow the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certaine village, there met him ten men which were lepers, which stood afarre off,

13 And they lifted vp their voyces, and said, Iesus Master, haue mercy on vs.

Leuit. 14. 2 14 And when he saw them, he said vnto them, *Goe shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voyce glorified God;

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, giuing him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus answering said, Were there not tenne cleansed, but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to giue glory to God, saue this stranger.

19 And he said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdome of God should come, hee answered them, and said, The Kingdome of God commeth not

*, with out. 4 shew.

‖ with obseruation.

21 Neither

21 Neither shall they say, Loe here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdome of God is || within you.

22 And hee sayd vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when yee shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 * And they shall say vnto you, See here, or see there: Goe not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as the lightening that lightneth out of the one part vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other part vnder heauen: so shall also the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must hee suffer many things, and bee reiected of this generation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe: so shall it bee also in the dayes of the Sonne of man.

27 They did eate, they dranke, they married wiues, they were giuen in marriage, vntill that day that Noe entred into the Arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all:

28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it raigned fire and brimstone from heauen: and destroyed them all.

30 Euen thus shall it bee in the day when the Sonne of man is reuealed.

31 In that day he which shall be on the house top, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not returne backe.

32 * Remember Lots wife.

33 * Whosoeuer shall seeke to saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life, shall preserue it.

34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall bee grinding together: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 || Two men shall be in the field: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered, and sayd vnto him, * Where Lord? And he said vnto them, Wheresoeuer the body is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The importunate widow. 9 The Pharisee and Publicane 15 Children brought to Christ. 28 All to bee left for Christs sake.

And

Or, among you.

* Mat. 24.

* Gen. 7.

* Gen. 1

* Gen. 1

* Mat. 1

* Mat. 2

|| *This 3 verse is w ting in m of the G copies.*

* Mat. 2

Thess. 5. And hee spake a parable vnto them, to this end, that men ought * alwayes to pray, and not to faint,

2 Saying, There was in a citie a Iudge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that citie, and shee came vnto him, saying, Auenge me of mine aduersary:

4 And hee would not for a while: But afterward he said within himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will auenge her, lest by her continuall comming, she weary me.

6 And the Lord sayd, Heare what the vniust iudge sayth.

7 And shall not God auenge his owne elect, which cry day and night vnto him, though he beare long with them?

8 I tell you that he will auenge them speedily. Neuertheleſſe, when the Sonne of man commeth, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable vnto certaine, which trusted in themselues || that they were righteous, and despised other:

|| as being righteous.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himselfe, God I thanke thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane,

12 I fast twice in the weeke, I giue tithes of all that I possesse.

13 And the Publicane standing afarre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes vnto heauen: but smote vpon his breast, saying, God be mercifull vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went downe to his house iustified rather then the other. * For euery one that exalteth himselfe, shall be abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

Luke 23. 12.

15 And they brought vnto him also infants, that hee would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd, Suffer little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God

17 Verily I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shal not receiue the kingdome of God as a little childe, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And

18 And a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I doe to inherite eternall life?
19 * And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? None is good saue one, that is, God. * Mat. 19.
20 Thou knowest the Commaudements, Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother.
21 And hee sayd, All these haue I kept from my youth vp.
22 Now when Iesus heard these things, he sayd vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing, Sell all that thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me.
23 And when he heard this, hee was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.
24 And when Iesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, he sayd, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God?
25 For it is easier for a camell to goe thorow a nedles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.
26 And they that heard it, sayd, Who then can bee saued?
27 And he sayd, The things that are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.
28 * Then Peter sayd, Loe wee haue left all, and followed thee. * Mat. 19.
29 And he sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake,
30 Who shall not receiue many fold more in this present time, and in the world to come life euerlasting.
31 ¶ * Then hee tooke vnto him the twelue, and said, vnto them, Behold, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and all things that are written by the Prophets concerning the Sonne of man, shall be accomplished. * Mat. 20.
32 For hee shall bee deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully intreated, and spitted on:
33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise againe.
34 And they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.
35 ¶ * And it came to passe, that as hee was come nigh to Iericho, a certaine blind man sate by the way side begging. * Mat. 20.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they tolde him that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 And he cryed, saying, Iesus thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that hee should holde his peace: but hee cryed so much the more, Thou Sonne of Dauid haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus stood and commaunded him to bee brought vnto him: and when he was come neere, hee asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall doe vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Receiue thy sight, thy faith hath saued thee.

23 And immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gaue praise vnto God.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Zacheus a Publicane. 11 The tenne pieces of money. 28 Christ rideth into Hierusalem, 41 Weepeth ouer it, 45 and purgeth the Temple.

AND Iesus entred, and passed thorow Iericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chiefe among the Publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus who he was, and could not for the prease, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed vp into a Sycamore tree to see him, for he he was to passe that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, hee looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto him, Zacheus, make haste, and come downe, for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And hee made haste, and came downe, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to bee guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zecheus stood, and said vnto the Lord, Behold Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore, and if I haue taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him foure fold.

9 And Iesus said vnto him, This day is saluation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is the sonne of Abraham.

10 For

10 *For the Son of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which is lost. *Mat. 18.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because hee was nigh to Hierusalem, & because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediately appeare.

22 * He said therefore, A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and to returne. *Mat. 25.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten ‖ pounds, and said vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, Wee will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was returned hauing received the kingdome, then he commanded these seruants to be called vnto him, to whom he had giuen the money, that hee might know how much euery man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And hee sayd vnto him, Well, thou good seruant: because thou hast beene faithfull in a very little, haue thou authority ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained fiue pounds.

19 And hee said likewise to him, Bee thou also ouer fiue cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I haue kept layd vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest vp that thou layedst not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sowe.

22 And he saith vnto him, Out of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, thou wicked seruant: Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking vp that I layde not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.

23 Wherefore then gauest thou not my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required mine owne with vsury?

24 And he said vnto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and giue it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.

26 For I say vnto you, * That vnto euery one which hath, shalbe giuen, and from him that hath not, euen that he hath shall be taken away from him. *Mat. 13.

‖ *Mina h translated pound, is twelue ou and a half which acc ding to fi shillings t ounce, is t pound tw shillings f pence.*

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I
should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them be-
fore mee.
28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, hee went before,
ascending vp to Hierusalem.
at.21.1. 29 * And it came to passe when hee was come nigh to
Bethphage and Bethany at the mount called the mount
of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,
30 Saying, Goe ye into the village ouer against you,
in the which at your entring yee shall finde a colte tied,
whereon yet neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him
hither.
31 And if any man aske you, Why doe yee loose him?
Thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need
of him.
32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found
euen as he had said vnto them.
33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners there-
of said vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?
34 And they said, the Lord hath need of him.
35 And they brought him to Iesus: and they cast their
garments vpon the colt, and they set Iesus thereon.
36 And as hee went, they spread their clothes in the
way.
37 And when hee was come nigh, euen now at the de-
scent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the
disciples beganne to reioyce and praise God with a lowd
voyce, for all the mighty workes that they had seene,
38 Saying, Blessed be the King that commeth in the
Name of the Lord, peace in heauen, and glory in the
Highest.
39 And some of the Pharisees from among the mul-
titude said vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.
40 And he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you,
that if these should hold their peace, the stones would im-
mediately cry out.
41 ¶ And when he was come neere, he beheld the city,
and wept ouer it,
42 Saying, If thou hadst knowen, euen thou, at least
in this thy day, the things which belong vnto thy peace!
but now they are hid from thine eyes.
43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine ene-
mies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee
round, and keepe thee in on euery side,
44 And shall lay thee euen with the ground, and thy
children within thee: and they shall not leaue in thee one
stone

stone vpon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 *And he went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought, *Mat. 21.

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

47 And hee taught daily in the Temple. But the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might doe: for all the people were ‖ very attentiue to heare him. ‖ Or, hang on him.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ auoucheth his authority by a question of Iohns Baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard. 19 Tribute to Cesar.

AND it * came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders. *Mat. 21.

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie doest thou these things? or who is hee that gaue thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answere me.

4 The Baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeued ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

9 Then began hee to speake to the people this parable: A * certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it foorth to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey for a long time. *Mat. 21.

10 And at the season he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard, but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And againe he sent another seruant, and they beat him also, and intreated him shamefully, and sent him away emptie.

12 And againe he sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, what shall I doe? I will send my beloued sonne: it may be they will reuerence him, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselues, saying, This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard doe vnto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall giue the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then
Psal.118.22 that is written, * The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner?

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chiefe Priestes and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay handes on him, and they feared the people: for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should faine themselues iust men, that they might take hold of his wordes, that so they might deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the Gouernour.

Luke.22.16. 21 And they asked him, saying, * Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the
r, of a person of any, but teachest the way of God || truely.
eth. 22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or no?

23 But he perceiued their craftinesse, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

ee Matt. 24 Shew me a || peny: Whose image and superscrip-
28. tion hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars.

25 And he said vnto them, Render therefore vnto Cesar the things which be Cesars, and vnto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they marueiled at his answere, and held their peace.

Mat 22 23. 27 ¶ * Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees, (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second tooke her to wife, & he died childles.

31 And the third tooke her, and in like maner the seuen also: And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all, the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is shee? for seuen had her to wife.

34 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, The children of this world marry, and are giuen in marriage:

35 But they which shalbe accounted worthy to obteine that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

37 Now that the dead are raised, * euen Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. *Exod.3

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the liuing, for all liue vnto him.

39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well sayd.

40 And after that, they durst not aske him any question at all.

41 And he said vnto them, * How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? *Mat.22

42 And Dauid himselfe sayeth in the Booke of Psalmes, The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

44 Dauid therefore calleth him Lord; how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, hee sayd vnto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walke in long robes, and loue greetings in the markets, and the highest seates in the Synagogues, and the chiefe roomes at feasts: *Mat.2

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The poore widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the Temple, and citie is foretold. 25 The signes thereof.

r.12.41. AND hee looked vp, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasurie.

2 And hee saw also a certaine poore widow, casting in

e Marke 42. thither two || mites.

3 And he said, Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these haue of their abundance cast in vnto the offerings of God, but shee of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

tt. 24 1. 5 ¶ * And as some spake of the Temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he sayd,

6 As for these things which yee behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not bee left one stone vpon another that shall not be throwen downe.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shal these things be? and what signe will there be when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he sayd, Take heede, that ye be not deceiued: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neere: goe yee not therefore after them.

9 But when yee shall heare of warres, and commotions, bee not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

tt. 24.7. 10 * Then said he vnto them, Nation shal rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome:

11 And great earthquakes shall bee in diuers places, and famines, and pestilences: and fearefull sights, and great signes shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, deliuering you vp to the Synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimony.

t. 10.19 14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answere.

15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisedome, which all your aduersaries shall not bee able to gainesay, nor resist.

16 And yee shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsefolkes, and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake.

18 * But

18 *But there shall not a haire of your heads perish. *Mat. 10.
19 In your pattence possesse ye your soules.
20 * And when yee shall see Hierusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. *Mat. 24.
21 Then let them that are in Judea, flee to the mountaines, and let them that are in the middest of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the countrey, enter thereinto
22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written, may be fulfilled.
23 But woe vnto them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes, for there shal be great distresse in the land, and wrath vpon this people.
24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shalbe led away captiues into all nations, and Hierusalem shall be troden downe of the Gentiles, vntill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.
25 ¶ * And there shall be signes in the Sunne, and in the Moone, and in the Starres, and vpon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexity, the Sea and the waues roaring, *Mat. 24.
26 Mens hearts failing them for feare, and for looking after those things which are comming on the earth: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken.
27 And then shal they see the Sonne of man comming in a cloude with power and great glory.
28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.
29 And he spake vnto them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees,
30 When they now shoote forth, yee see and know of your owne selues, that Summer is now nigh at hand.
31 So likewise yee, when yee see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.
32 Verily I say vnto you, This generation shall not passe away till all be fulfilled.
33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.
34 ¶ And take heede to your selues, lest at any time your hearts bee ouercharged with surfetting and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come vpon you vnawares.
35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray alwayes, that ye may
bee accounted worthy to escape al these things that shall
come to passe, and to stand before the Sonne of man.
37 And in the day time he was teaching in the Tem-
ple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount
that is called the mount of Olives.
38 And all the people came early in the morning to
him in the Temple for to heare him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Iewes conspire against Christ. 3 Satan entreth into Iudas. 7 The Passeouer prepared. 17 The Supper instituted 47 Iudas betrayeth him.

Mat. 26. 2. NOw the feast of vnleauened bread drew nigh, which
is called the Passeouer.
2 And the chiefe Priests and the Scribes sought how
they might kill him; for they feared the people.
Mat. 26. 14 3 ¶ * Then entred Satan into Iudas surnamed Is-
cariot, being of the number of the twelue.
4 And hee went his way, and communed with the
chiefe Priests and Captaines, how he might betray him
vnto them.
5 And they were glad, and couenanted to giue him
money.
6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray
him vnto them || in the absence of the multitude.
|| without tumult.
7 ¶ * Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when
the Passeouer must be killed.
Mat. 26. 17. 8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Goe and pre-
pare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate.
9 And they said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we
prepare?
10 And he sayd vnto them, Behold, when yee are en-
tred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a
pitcher of water, follow him into the house, where hee en-
treth in.
11 And yee shall say vnto the goodman of the house,
The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the guest-cham-
ber, where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?
12 And hee shall shew you a large vpper roome furni-
shed, there make ready.
13 And they went, and found as hee had sayd vnto
Mat. 26. 20 them, and they made ready the Passeouer.
14 * And when the houre was come, hee sate downe,
and the twelue Apostles with him.
15 And hee sayd vnto them, || With desire I haue
|| I haue earnestly desired
desired

desired to eate this Passeouer with you before I suffer.
16 For I say vnto you, I will not any more eate thereof, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.
17 And hee tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and said, Take this, and diuide it among your selues.
18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God shall come.
19 ¶ * And hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes, and brake it, and gaue vnto them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you, this doe in remembrance of me. *Mat. 26. 2
20 Likewise also the cup after Supper, saying, This cup is the new Testament in my blood, which is shed for you.
21 ¶ But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth mee, is with me on the table. *Mar. 26. 2
22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it was determined, but woe vnto that man by whom he is betrayed.
23 And they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it was that should doe this thing.
24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.
25 * And hee said vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship ouer them, and they that exercise authority vpon them, are called benefactors. *Mat. 20.
26 But yee shall not bee so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the yonger, and he that is chiefe, as he that doeth serue.
27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meate, or he that seruеth? Is not he that sitteth at meate? But I am among you as he that seruеth.
28 Yee are they which haue continued with me in my temptations.
29 And I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me,
30 That yee may eate and drinke at my Table in my Kingdome, * and sit on Thrones iudging the twelue tribes of Israel. *Mat. 19.
31 ¶ And the Lord sayd, Simon, Simon, behold, * Satan hath desired to haue you, that hee may sift you as wheate: *1. Pet. 5.
32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not; and when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.
33 And hee said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee both into prison, and to death.
34 * And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cocke shall not *Mat. 26

crow

crow this day before that thou shalt thrice denie that thou
knowest me.

at 10.9. 35 * And he said vnto them, When I sent you without
purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked yee any thing? And
they sayd, Nothing.

36 Then said he vnto them, But now he that hath a
purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and hee that
hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

Sai. 53.12. 37 For I say vnto you, that this that is written, must
yet bee accomplished in mee, * And hee was reckoned a-
mong the transgressours: For the things concerning me
haue an end.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, heere are two swords.
And he said vnto them, It is enough.

at. 26.36. 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went as hee was woont,
to the mount of Olives, and his Disciple also followed
him.

at. 26.41 40 * And when he was at the place, he said vnto them,
Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawen from them about a stones
cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remoue this
cup from me: neuertheless, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from hea-
uen, strengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly,
and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling
downe to the ground.

45 And when hee rose vp from prayer, and was come
to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And said vnto them, Why sleepe yee? Rise, and
pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

26.47 47 ¶ And while yee yet spake, behold, a multitude,
and he that was called Judas, one of the twelue, went be-
fore them, and drew neere vnto Iesus, to kisse him.

48 But Iesus sayd vnto him, Judas, betrayest thou
the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what
would follow, they sayd vnto him, Lord, shall wee smite
with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the seruant of the high
Priest, and cut off his right eare.

51 And Iesus answered and said, Suffer yee thus
farre. And he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the chiefe Priests and Cap-
taines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come
to

to him, Be yee come out as against a thiefe, with swords and staues?

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, yee stretched forth no handes against mee: but this is your houre, and the power of darkenesse.

54 ¶ * Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him into the high Priestes house, and Peter followed afarre off. *Mat. 26.

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter sate downe among them. *Mat. 26.

56 But a certaine maide beheld him as he sate by the fire, and earnestly looked vpon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and sayd, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him, for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter sayde, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cocke crew.

61 And the Lord turned and looked vpon Peter, and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrice.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they strooke him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ * And as soone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councell, saying. * Mat. 27.

67 Art thou the Christ? Tell vs: And hee sayd vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue.

68 And if I also aske you, you will not answere mee, nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then sayde they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he sayd vnto them, * Ye say that I am. *Mar. 14.

71 And

71 And they sayd, What neede wee any further witnesse? For we our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Iesus is accused before Pilate, 7 Sent to Herod, 11 mocked, and sent backe againe to Pilate. 13 Deliuered to bee crucified. 46 His death. 50 His buriall.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, Wee found this fellow peruerting the nation, and forbidding to giue tribute to Cæsar, saying, that he himselfe is Christ a king.

Mat 27.11. 3 *And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? and hee answered him, and sayd, Thou sayest it.

4 Then sayd Pilate to the chiefe Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth vp the people, teaching throughout all Iurie, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, hee asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoone as he knew that he belonged vnto Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himselfe also was at Hierusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Iesus, hee was exceeding glad, for hee was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and hee hoped to haue seene some miracle done by him.

9 Then hee questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of warre, set him at nought, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity betweene themselues.

Matt. 7.23. 13 ¶ *And Pilate, when hee had called together the chiefe Priests, and the rulers, and the people,

14 Said vnto them, Yee haue brought this man vnto mee, as one that peruerteth the people, and behold, I hauing examined him before you, haue found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and loe nothing worthy of death is done vnto him.

16 I will

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.
17 For of necessity hee must release one vnto them at the Feast.
18 And they cryed out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release vnto vs Barabbas,
19 Who for a certaine sedition made in the citie, and for murder, was cast in prison.
20 Pilate therefore willing to release Iesus, spake againe to them:
21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.
22 And he said vnto them the third time, Why, what euill hath hee done? I haue found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him goe.
23 And they were instant with loud voyces, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voyces of them, and of the chiefe Priests preuailed.
24 And Pilate || gaue sentence, that it should bee as they required. || Or, assent
25 And he released vnto them, him that for sedition and murder, was cast into prison, whom they had desired, but he deliuered Iesus to their will.
26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold vpon one Simon a Cyrenian, comming out of the countrey, and on him they laid the Crosse, that he might beare it after Iesus. * Mat. 27.
27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.
28 But Iesus turning vnto them, said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for mee, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.
29 For behold, the dayes are comming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the paps that neuer gaue sucke.
30 * Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, Fall on vs, and to the hills, Couer vs. * Esay 2. hose. 10. 8 reuel. 6. 1
31 * For if they doe these things in a greene tree, what shall be done in the drie? * 1. Pet. 4.
32 * And there were also two other malefactors led with him, to be put to death. * Mat. 27.
33 * And when they were come to the place which is called ||, Calnary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left. || Or, the pl of a skull.
34 ¶ Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them, for they know not what they doe: And they parted his raiment and cast lots.

35 And

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saued others, let him saue himselfe, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, comming to him, and offering him vineger,

37 And saying, If thou bee the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription also was written ouer him, in letters of Greeke, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactors, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou bee Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Doest thou not feare God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And wee indeed iustly; for wee receiue the due reward of our deedes, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord remember me when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 And it was about the sixt houre, and there was a darknesse ouer all the || earth, vntill the ninth houre.

|| land.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Iesus had cryed with a lowd voyce, he said, * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and hauing sayd thus, he gaue vp the ghost.

* Psal. 31. 6

47 Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainely this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding ẏ things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afarre off, beholding these things.

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, a counseller, and he was a good man, and a iust.

* Mat. 27. 57

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deed of them) he was of Arimathea a citie of the Iewes (who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God.)

52 This man went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus.

53 And

53 And he tooke it downe, and wrapped it in linnen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein neuer man before was laid.

54 And that day was the Preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the woman also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointment, and rested the Sabbath day, according to the Commandement.

CHAP XXIIII.

1 Christes resurrection declared to the women. 9 They report it to others, 13 and 36 Christ himselfe appeareth 51 He ascendeth.

NOw * vpon the first day of the weeke, verie early in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certaine others with them. * Mat. 28.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the Sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they sayd vnto them, Why seeke ye ‖ the liuing among the dead? ‖ Or, him that liueth

6 Hee is not here, but is risen: Remember how hee spake vnto you when he was yet in Galilee. * Mat. 17.

7 Saying, The sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and bee crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the Sepulchre, and told all those things vnto the eleuen, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Ioanna, and Mary the mother of Iames, and other women that were with them, which told these things vnto the Apostles.

11 * And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeued not.

12 * Then arose Peter, and ran vnto the Sepulchre, and stooping downe, he beheld the linnen clothes layd by themselues, and departed, wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe. * Iohn 2.

Mar. 16.12 13 ¶ * And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drew neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not know him.

17 And he sayd vnto them, What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, answering, said vnto him, art thou onely a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not knowen the things which are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Concerning Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mighty indeede and word before God, and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe Priests, and our rulers, delivered him to bee condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But wee trusted that it had beene he, which should haue redeemed Israel: and besides all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women also of our companie made vs astonished, which were early at the Sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, That they had also seene a vision of Angels, which said that he was aliue.

24 And certaine of them which were with vs, went to the Sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then hee said vnto them, O fooles, and slow of heart, to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the Prophets, he expounded vnto them in all the Scriptures, the things concerning himselfe.

28 And they drew nigh vnto the village whither they went, and hee made as though hee would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs,

for

for it is toward euening, and the day is farre spent: And he went in to tary with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sate at meate with them, hee tooke bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gaue to them:

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him and he ‖ vanished out of their sight.

‖ Or, ceased to be seene of them.

32 And they said one to the other, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and while he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how hee was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe stood in the midst of them, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you.

* Mat. 16.

37 But they were terrified, and affrighted, and supposed that they had seene a spirit.

38 And hee said vnto them, Why are yee troubled, and why doe thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my selfe: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoken he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondred, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meate?

42 And they gaue him a peece of a broyled fish, and of an hony combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And hee saide vnto them, These are the wordes which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all things must bee fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes concerning mee.

45 Then opened hee their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooued Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should

be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

ohn 15. 49 ¶ * And behold, I send the promise of my Father
actes 1.4. vpon you: but tarry ye in the city of Hierusalem vntill ye be endued with power from on high.

50 ¶ And he led them out as farre as to Bethany, and he lift vp his hands and blessed them.

ar. 16.19 51 * And it came to passe while he blessed them, he was
es 1.9. parted from them, and carried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy:

53 And were continually in the Temple, praysing and blessing God. Amen.

¶ THE GOSPEL ACCORding to S. Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 Christs diuinitie, humanitie, and office. 15 Iohns testimonie of him. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter, and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the word was God.

en. 1. 1. 2 * The same was in the beginning with God.

ol. 1. 16. 3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.

at. 3. 1. 6 ¶ * There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeue.

8 He was not that light, but was sent to beare witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world.

eb. 11. 3 10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them gaue he power

power to become the sonnes of God, euen to them that beleeue on his Name:

13 Which were borne, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 *And the word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cryed, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that commeth after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his *fulnesse haue wee all receiued, and grace for grace.

17 For the Law was giuen by Moses, but grace and truth came by Iesus Christ.

18 *No man hath seene God at any time: the onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priests and Leuites from Hierusalem to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou ‖ that Prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they vnto him, What art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? What sayest thou of thy selfe?

23 *Hee said, I am the voyce of one crying in the wildernesse: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharises.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

27 *He it is, who comming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara, beyond Iordan, where Iohn was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him and saith, Behold the Lambe of God, which ‖ taketh away the sinne of the world.

30 This is hee of whom I said, After mee commeth a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

‖ Or, th... or prin...

* Matt. 8

* Col. 1.

* 1. Ioh. 1. tim. 6

‖ Or, a... phet.

* Matt...

* Mat... actes

‖ Or, b...

31 And I knew him not: but hee that should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

Matt.3.16. 32 * And Iohn bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heauen like a Doue, and it abode vpon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent mee to baptize with water, the same said vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaynng on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw and bare record, that this is the Sonne of God.

35 ¶ Againe, the next day after, Iohn stood, and two of his disciples.

36 And looking vpon Iesus as hee walked, hee saith, Behold the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and they followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned, and saw them following, and saith vnto them, What seeke yee? They said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say being interpreted, Master) where || dwellest thou? || abidest.

39 He saith vnto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was || about the tenth houre. || at was houres night.

40 One of the two which heard Iohn speake, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his owne brother Simon, and saith vnto him, Wee haue found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, || the Christ. || the anointed.

42 And hee brought him to Iesus. And when Iesus beheld him, hee said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona, thou shalt bee called Cephas, which is by interpretation, || a stone. || Peter.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith vnto him, Follow mee.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathaneel, and saith vnto him, Wee haue found him of whom * Moses in the Law, and the * Prophets did write, Iesus of Nazareth the sonne of Ioseph. Gen.49.10 Deut.18.18 Esai.4.2.

46 And Nathaneel sayd vnto him, Canne there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith vnto him Come and see.

47 Iesus

47 Iesus saw Nathaneel comming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.
48 Nathaneel saith vnto him, Whence knowest thou mee? Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the figtree, I saw thee.
49 Nathaneel answered, and saith vnto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God, thou art the King of Israel.
50 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I said vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the figtree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.
51 And hee sayth vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto you, Hereafter yee shall see heauen open, and the Angels of God ascending, and descending vpon the Sonne of man.

CHAP, II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth to Capernaum and Ierusalem, 14 and purgeth the Temple.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Iesus was there.
2 And both Iesus was called, and his disciples to the marriage.
3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Iesus saith vnto him, They haue no wine.
4 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.
5 His mother saith vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.
6 And there were set there sixe water-pots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins apiece.
7 Iesus sayth vnto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brim.
8 And he saith vnto them, Draw out now, and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. And they bare it.
9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the seruants which drew the water knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegroome,
10 And saith vnto him, Euery man at the beginning doeth set foorth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine vntill now.
11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested foorth his glory, and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 ¶ After this hee went downe to Capernaum, hee, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem,

14 And found in the Temple those that sold oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and the changers of money, sitting.

15 And when hee had made a scourge of small coards, hee droue them all out of the Temple, and the sheepe, and the oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables,

16 And sayd vnto them that sold doues, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house an house of merchandize.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written,
1.69.9. * The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp.

18 ¶ Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, seeing that thou doest these things?

2.26.61. 19 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, * Destroy this Temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp

20 Then sayd the Iewes, Forte and sixe yeeres was this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the Temple of his body.

22 When therefore hee was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that hee had sayd this vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had sayd.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Hierusalem at the Passeouer, in the feast day, many beleeued in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration. 14 Of faith in Christ. 16 Gods great loue to the world. 23 Iohns Baptisme, witnesse, & doctrine concerning Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes:

2 The same came vnto Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can doe these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Iesus

3 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, Except a man be borne ‖ againe, he cannot see the kingdome of God. ‖ Or, from aboue.

4 Nicodemus sayth vnto him, How can a man bee borne when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, Except a man be borne of water, and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that which is borne of the spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said vnto thee, Yee must bee borne ‖ againe. ‖ Or, from aboue.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: So is euery one that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, We speake that we doe know, and testifie that we haue seene: and ye receiue not our witnesse.

12 If I haue told you earthly things, and yee beleeue not: how shall ye beleeue if I tell you of heauenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen, but hee that came downe from heauen, euen the Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 ¶ * And as Moses lifted vp the serpent in the wildernesse: euen so must the Sonne of man be lifted vp: *Num. 21

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish but haue eternall life.

16 ¶ * For God so loued the world, that hee gaue his onely begotten Sonne: that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life. *Iohn 4

17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saued. *Cha. 12

18 ¶ Hee that beleeueth on him, is not condemned: but hee that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because hee hath not beleeued in the Name of the onely begotten Sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is come into the world, and men loued darkenesse rather then light, because their deedes were euill. *Chap. 1

20 For

20 For euery one that doeth euill, hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, lest his deedes should bee || reproued.

r, discouered.

21 But he that doth the trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes may bee made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things, came Iesus and his disciples into the land of Iudea, and there bee taried with them, * and baptized.

hap. 4. 2.

23 ¶ And Iohn also was baptizing in Aenon, neere to Salem, because there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question betweene some of Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Iordan, * to whom thou barest witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

hap. 1. 7,

br. 5. 4.

27 Iesus answered, and sayd, * A man can || receiue nothing, except it be giuen him from heauen.

, take vnimselfe.

28 Ye your selues beare me witnesse, that I sayd, * I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

ap. 1. 20.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroome: but the friend of the bridegroome, which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegromes voyce: This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that commeth from aboue, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: hee that commeth from heauen, is aboue all:

32 And what hee hath seene and heard, that hee testifieth, and no man receiueth his testimony.

m. 3. 4,

33 Hee that hath receiued his testimony, * hath set to his seale, that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giueth not the Spirit by measure vnto him.

t. 11. 27

35 * The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath giuen all things into his hand.

bac. 2. 4.

n 5. 10.

36 * He that beleeueth on the Sonne, hath euerlasting life: and he that beleeueth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ talketh with the woman of Samaria, and reueaileth himselfe vnto her. 27 His disciples marueile. 31 Christs zeale to Gods glory.

When

When therefore the Lord knew how the Phariſees had heard that Ieſus made and baptized moe diſciples then Iohn,

2 (Though Ieſus himſelfe baptized not, but his diſciples:)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galilee.

4 And he muſt needes goe thorow Samaria.

5 Then commeth hee to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neere to the parcell of ground, * that Iacob gaue to his ſonne Ioſeph.

*Gen. 33. and 48. 22. Ioſh. 24. 2.

6 Now Iacobs well was there. Ieſus therefore being wearied with his iourney, ſate thus on the well: and it was about the ſixt houre.

7 There commeth a woman of Samaria to draw water: Ieſus ſaith vnto her, Giue me to drinke.

8 For his diſciples were gone away vnto the citie to buy meate.

9 Then ſaith the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou being a Iew, aſkeſt drinke of mee which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes haue no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto her, If thou knoweſt the gift of God, and who it is that ſaith to thee, Giue mee to drinke, thou wouldeſt haue aſked of him, and hee would haue giuen thee liuing water.

11 The woman ſaith vnto him, Sir, thou haſt nothing to draw with, and the well is deepe: from whence then haſt thou that liuing water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the Well, and dranke thereof himſelfe, and his children, and his cattell?

13 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto her, Whoſoeuer drinketh of this water, ſhall thirſt againe:

14 But whoſoeuer drinketh of the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall neuer thirſt: but the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall bee in him a Well of water, ſpringing vp vnto euerlaſting life.

15 The woman ſaith vnto him, Sir, giue me this water, that I thirſt not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Ieſus ſaith vnto her, Goe, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman anſwered and ſayd, I haue no husband. Ieſus ſayd vnto her, Thou haſt well ſayd, I haue no husband:

18 For thou haſt had fiue husbands, and he whom thou now haſt, is not thy husband: In that ſaydeſt thou truely.

19 The

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perceiue that
thou art a Prophet.
20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye
Deut. 12.5. say, That * in Hierusalem is the place where men ought
to worship.
21 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, beleeue me, the houre
commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet
at Hierusalem worship the Father.
22 Ye worship ye know not what; wee know what
we worship: for saluation is of the Iewes.
23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the
true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit, and
in trueth; for the Father seeketh such to worship him.
1 Co. 3.17 24 * God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must
worship him in spirit and in trueth.
25 The woman saith vnto him, I know that Messias
commeth, which is called Christ: when hee is come, hee
will tell vs all things.
26 Iesus saith vnto her, I that speake vnto thee, am
hee.
27 ¶ And vpon this came his Disciples, and marueiled that hee talked with the woman: yet no man sayd,
What seekest thou? or, What talkest thou with her?
28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her
way into the citie, and saith to the men,
29 Come, see a man, which told mee all things that
euer I did: Is not this the Christ?
30 Then they went out of the citie, & came vnto him.
31 ¶ In the meane whilst his Disciples prayed him
saying, Master, eate.
32 But he sayd vnto them, I haue meate to eate that
ye know not of.
33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath
any man brought him ought to eate?
34 Iesus sayth vnto them, My meate is, to doe the will
of him that sent me, and to finish his worke.
35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then
commeth harueste? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your
Matt. 9.37. eyes, and looke on the fields: * for they are white already
to harueste.
36 And hee that reapeth receiueth wages, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall: that both he that soweth, and
he that reapeth may reioyce together.
37 And herein is that saying true: One soweth, and
another reapeth.
38 I sent you to reape that, whereon yee bestowed no
labour:

labour: other men laboured, and yee are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleeued on him for the saying of the woman, which testifies, He told me all that euer I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they besought him that he would tary with them, and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many mee beleeued, because of his owne word:

42 And sayd vnto the woman, Now wee beleeue not, because of thy saying, for wee haue heard him our selues, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Sauiour of the world.

43 ¶ * Now after two dayes hee departed thence, and went into Galilee: *Mat. 13.

44 For Iesus himselfe testified, that a Prophet hath no honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then when hee was come into Galilee, the Galileans receiued him, hauing seene all the things that hee did at Ierusalem at the Feast: for they also went vnto the Feast.

46 So Iesus came againe into Cana of Galilee, * where hee made the water wine. And there was a certaine || noble man whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum. *Chap 2. ||Or, Courtier, or, ruler.

47 When hee heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galilee, he went vp vnto him, and besought him, that hee would come downe and heale his sonne: for hee was at the poynt of death.

48 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The noble man sayd vnto him, Sir, come downe ere my childe die.

50 * Iesus saith vnto him, Goe thy way, thy sonne liueth. And the man beleeued the word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and he went his way.

51 And as hee was now going downe, his seruants met him, and told him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the houre when hee began to amend. And they said vnto him, Yester day at the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 So the father knew, that it was at the same houre, in the which Iesus said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth, and himselfe beleeued, and his whole house.

54 This is againe the second miracle that Iesus did, when he was come out of Iudea into Galilee.

CHAP.

8 Iesus on the Sabbath day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirtie yeeres. 10 The Iewes cauill and persecute him for it.

euit. 23.2
ut. 16.

AFter * this, there was a Feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 Now there is at Hierusalem by the Sheepe ‖ market, a poole which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having fiue porches.

7, gate.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folke, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had an infirmitie thirtie and eight yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knew that hee had beene now a long time in that case, hee saith vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I haue no man when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before mee.

8 Iesus saith vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: And on the same day was the Sabbath.

10 ¶ The Iewes therefore said vnto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day, * it is not lawfull for thee to carry thy bed.

e. 17. 22

11 He answered them, Hee that made me whole, the same said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed and walke?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away, ‖ a multitude being in that place.

from the
itude
gas.

14 Afterward Iesus findeth him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Iewes that it was Iesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Iewes persecute Iesus, and sought

sought to slay him, because hee had done these things on the Sabbath day.

17 ¶ But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him, not onely because hee had broken the Sabbath, but saith also, that God was his Father, making himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, but what he seeth the Father doe: for what things soeuer hee doeth, these also doth the Sonne likewise.

20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things that himselfe doeth, and he will shew him greater workes then these, that ye may marueile.

21 For as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them: euen so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man: but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne:

23 That all men should honour the Sonne, euen as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that heareth my word, and beleeueth on him that sent mee, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death vnto life.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre is comming, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe: so hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe.

27 And hath giuen him authority to execute iudgement also, because he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre is comming, in the which all that are in the graues, shall heare his voyce,

29 And shall come forth, * they that haue done good vnto the resurrection of life, and they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of damnation. *Mat. 25.

30 I can of mine owne selfe doe nothing: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father, which hath sent me.

31 * If I beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse is not true. *Chap. 8.

32 ¶ * There

Matt.3.17. 32 ¶ * There is another that beareth witnesse of mee, and I know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true.

Chap.1.7. 33 Yee sent vnto Iohn, * and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth.

34 But I receiue not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saued.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to reioyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I haue greater witnesse then that of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I doe, beare witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me.

Matt.3.17. 37 And the Father himselfe which hath sent mee, Iohn 17.5. * hath borne witnesse of mee. Yee haue neither heard his Deut.4.12. voyce at any time, * nor seene his shape.

38 And yee haue not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeue not.

39 ¶ Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and yee receiue mee not: if another shall come in his owne name, him ye will receiue.

Iohn.12.43 44 * How can ye beleeue, which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth from God onely?

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses in whom ye trust.

46 For had yee beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued me: * for he wrote of me.

Gen.3.15. 47 But if yee beleeue not his writings, how shall yee Deut.18.15. beleeue my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth fiue thousand with fiue loaues and two fishes. 26 He reproueth the fleshly hearers of his word: 32 Declareth himselfe to be the bread of life.

AFter these things, Iesus went ouer the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias:

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which hee did on them that were diseased.

3 And

3 And Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there hee sate with his disciples.
4 *And the Passeouer, a feast of the Iewes, was nigh.
5 ¶ *When Iesus then lift vp his eyes, and saw a great company come vnto him, hee sayth vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eate?
6 (And this hee saide to proone him: for hee himselfe knew what he would doe,)
7 Philip answered him, Two hundred peny-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.
8 One of his disciples, Andrew Simon Peters brother, saith vnto him,
9 There is a Ladde here, which hath fiue barley loaues, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?
10 And Iesus said, Make the men sit downe. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sate downe in number about fiue thousand.
11 And Iesus tooke the loaues, and when he had giuen thankes, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set downe, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.
12 When they were filled, hee said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the fragments that remaine, that nothing be lost.
13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelue baskets with the fragments of the fiue barley loaues, which remained ouer and aboue vnto them that had eaten.
14 Then those men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, saide, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.
15 ¶ When Iesus therefore perceiued that they would come and take him by force, to make him a King, hee departed againe into a mountaine, himselfe alone.
16 *And when euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,
17 And entered into a ship, and went ouer the sea toward Capernaum: and it was now darke, and Iesus was not come to them.
18 And the Sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.
19 So when they had rowed about fiue and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they see Iesus walking on the Sea,

*Leuit. 23. deut. 16. 1.
*Mat. 14. 1
*Mat. 14. 2

and drawing nigh vnto the ship: and they were afraid.
20 But he saith vnto them, It is I, be not afraid.
21 Then they willingly receiued him into the shippe, and immediatly the shippe was at the land whither they went.
22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boate there, saue that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples into the boate, but that his disciples were gone away alone:
23 Howbeit there came other boates from Tiberias, nigh vnto that place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had giuen thankes.
24 When the people therefore saw that Iesus was not there, neither his disciple, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.
25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?
26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Ye seeke me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eate of the loaues, and were filled.
27 || Labour not for the flesh which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: * for him hath God the Father sealed.
28 Then said they vnto him, What shall we doe, that we might worke the workes of God?
29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them. * This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue on him whom he hath sent.
30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and beleeue thee? What doest thou worke?
31 * Our fathers did eat Manna in the desart, as it is written, * He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.
32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely, I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you the true bread from heauen.
33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.
34 Then saide they vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.
35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am the bread of life: he that commeth to mee, shall neuer hunger: and he that beleeueth on me, shall neuer thirst.

r, worke
f.
Mat. 3. 17.
ohn 3. 33.
Exo. 16 15
m. 11. 7.
Psal. 78 25

36 But

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.
37 All that the Father giueth mee, shall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I will in no wise cast out.
38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but the will of him that sent me.
39 And this is the Fathers will, which hath sent mee, that of all which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.
40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that euery one which seeth the Sonne, and beleeueth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.
41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because hee said, I am the bread which came downe from heauen.
42 And they sayd, * Is not this Iesus the sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came downe from heauen? *Mat.13.5
43 Iesus therefore answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.
44 No man can come to mee, except the Father which hath sent mee, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.
45 * It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me, *Esa.54. iere.31.3
46 Not that any man hath seene the Father; * saue he which is of God, he hath seene the Father. *Mat.11.
47 Verely, verely, I say vnto you, He that beleeueth on me, hath euerlasting life.
48 I am that bread of life.
49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead.
50 This is the bread which commeth downe from heauen, that a man may eate thereof, and not die.
51 I am the liuing bread which came downe from heauen. If any man eate of this bread, he shall liue for euer: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.
52 The Iewes therefore strone among themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate?
53 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely, I say vnto you, Except yee eat the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.
54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meate indeede, and my bloud is drinke indeede.

56 Hee that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my bloud, dwelleth in mee, and I in him.

57 As the liuing Father hath sent mee, & I liue by the Father; so, he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heaven: not as your fathers did eate Manna, and are dead: hee that eateth of this bread shall liue for euer.

59 These things saide hee in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his Disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can heare it?

61 When Iesus knew in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at it, he said vnto them, Doth this offend you?

Chap. 3. 13. 62 * What and if yee shall see the Sonne of man ascend vp where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I spake vnto you, they are Spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not. For Iesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And hee sayd, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto mee, except it were giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we goe? Thou hast the wordes of eternall life.

Mat. 16. 16 69 * And wee beleeue, and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, haue not I chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

71 Hee spake of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for hee it was that should betray him, being one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

7 Iesus reproueth his kinsmen: 10 goeth vp to the feast of Tabernacles, 14 teacheth in the Temple. 40 Diuers opinions of Christ 45 The Pharisees angry at their officers, and at Nicodemus.

After

AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walke in Iurie, because the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 *Now the Iewes feast of Tabernacles was at hand. *Leui.23.

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy Disciples also may see the workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himselfe seeketh to bee knowen openly: If thou doe these things, shew thy selfe to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleeue in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe yee vp vnto this feast: I goe not vp yet vnto this feast, * for my time is not yet full come. * Chap.8.

9 When he had said these words vnto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone vp, then went he vp also vnto the Feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the Feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people, concerning him: For some said, He is a good man: Others said, Nay, but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 ¶ Now about the middest of the feast, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this man ‖ letters, hauing neuer learned? ‖Or, learn

16 Iesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it bee of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glorie: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnesse is in him.

19 *Did not Moses giue you the Law, and yet none of you keepeth the Law? *Why goe yee about to kill me? *Exod.24. *Chap.5.

20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a deuill: Who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered and said vnto them, I haue done one worke, and ye all maruaile.

Leuit. 12.3 Gen. 17.10. 22 * Moses therefore gaue vnto you Circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, * but of the fathers) and ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath day receiue circumcision, || that the Law of Moses should not be broken; are yee angry at mee, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath day?

|| Or, without breaking the Law of Moses Deut. 1.16.

24 Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement.

25 Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he whom they seeke to kill?

26 But loe, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing vnto him: Doe the Rulers know indeede that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit wee know this man whence hee is; but when Christ commeth no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the Temple as hee taught, saying, Yee both know mee, and yee know whence I am, and I am not come of myselfe, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man layde hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleeued on him, and said, When Christ commeth, will he doe moe miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chiefe Priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent me.

Chap. 13.33 34 * Ye shall seeke mee, and shall not finde mee: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Iewes among themselues, Whither will he goe, that we shall not finde him? will he goe vnto the dispersed among the || Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

|| Or, Greekes.

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Yee shall seeke mee, and shall not finde me? And where I am, thither ye cannot come?

Leui. 23.36 37 * In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cryed, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke.

38 * He

38 * Hee that beleeueth on mee, as the Scripture hath *Deut. 1
sayd, out of his belly shall flow riuers of liuing water.

39 (* But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that *Ioel 2.2
beleeue on him, should receiue. For the holy Ghost was isai. 44.3
not yet giuen, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, sayd, Of a trueth this is the Prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some sayd, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 * Hath not the Scripture said, That Christ com- *Matt. 2
meth of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethlehem, where Dauid was?

43 So there was a diuision among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, and they said vnto them, Why haue yee not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are yee also deceiued?

48 Haue any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees beleeued on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the Law, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith vnto them, (* He that came to *Chap.
Iesus by night, being one of them,)

51 * Doeth our Law iudge any man before it heare *Deut. 1
him, and know what he doeth? and 19.

52 They answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and looke: for out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ deliuereth the woman taken in adultery: 12 preacheth himselfe the light of the world, and iustifieth his doctrine.

IEsus went out vnto the mount of Olues:

2 And early in the morning hee came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and hee sate downe and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought vnto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say vnto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery in the very act.

Leui.20.10. 5 * Now Moses in the Law commaunded vs, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they sayd, tempting him, that they might haue to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, hee lift vp

Deut.17.7. himselfe, and said vnto them, * He that is without sinne among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And againe, hee stouped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being conuicted by their owne conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, euen vnto the last: and Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe, and saw none but the woman, hee said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 Shee sayd, No man, Lord. And Iesus said vnto her, Neither doe I condemne thee: Goe, and sinne no more.

12 ¶ Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying,

Chap.7.5. * I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall

9.5. not walke in darkenesse, but shall haue the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, Thou beaest record of thy selfe, thy record is not true.

Chap.5.31. 14 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, * Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but yee cannot tell whence I came, and whither I goe.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh, I iudge no man.

16 And yet if I iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

Deut.17.6. 17 * It is also written in your Law, that the testimo-

c.18.16. nie of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is thy Father? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if yee had knowen mee, yee should haue knowen my Father also.

20 These wordes spake Iesus in the treasurie, as hee taught in the Temple: and no man layd hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 en

21 Then sayd Iesus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye shall seeke mee, and shall die in your sinnes: Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himselfe? because he saith, Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from aboue: Ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you that ye shall die in your sinnes. For if ye beleeue not that I am he, you shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the same that I said vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, and to Iudge of you: But he that sent mee is true, and I speake to the world those things which I haue heard of him.

27 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe: but as my Father hath taught me, I speake these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with mee: the Father hath not left mee alone: for I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many beleeued on him.

31 Then said Iesus to those Iewes which beleeued on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeede.

32 And yee shall know the Trueth, and the Trueth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We bee Abrahams seede, and were neuer in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free:

34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, *Whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the seruant of sinne. *Rom. 6. 2. pet. 2.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth euer.

36 If the Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye doe that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They

39 They answered, and sayd vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus saith vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye seeke to kill me, a man that hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Yee doe the deedes of your father. Then said they to him, We be not borne of fornication, we haue one Father, euen God.

42 Iesus sayd vnto them, If God were your Father, ye would loue mee, for I proceeded forth, and came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe yee not vnderstand my speech? euen because ye cannot heare my word.

John 3.8 44 * Yee are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father ye will doe: he was a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When ye speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you conuinceth mee of sinne? And if I say the trueth, why doe ye not beleeue me?

John 4.6 47 * Hee that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: yee therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and sayd vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill: but I honour my Father, and ye doe dishonour me.

50 And I seeke not my owne glory, there is one that seeketh and iudgeth.

51 Verily, verily I say vnto you, If a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then sayd the Iewes vnto him, Now wee know that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets: and thou sayest, If a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God.

55 Yet ye haue not knowen him, but I know him: and if I should say I know him not, I shall be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his saying.

56 Your

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeeres old, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus said vnto them, verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him: but Iesus hidde himselfe, and went out of the Temple, going through the mids of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 He that was borne blinde is restored to sight. 8 Hee is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They excommunicate him. 35 Christ receiueth him, and he confesseth Christ.

AND as Iesus passed by, hee saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man or his parents, that hee was borne blinde?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent mee, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world. * Chap. 8

5 When he had thus spoken, hee spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he || anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay, || Or, spr the clay the eyes blinde ma

7 And said vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) Hee went his way therefore and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seene him, that hee was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they vnto him, How were thine eyes opened.

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and hee said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and receiued my sight.

12 Then said they vnto him, Where is hee? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath day when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him how he had receiued his sight. Hee said vnto them, He put clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed and doe see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a diuision among them.

17 They say vnto the blind man againe, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a Prophet.

18 But the Iewes did not beleeue concerning him, that he had beene blind, and receiued his sight, vntill they called the parents of him that had receiued his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying. Is this your sonne, who ye say was borne blinde? how then doeth hee now see?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age, aske him, he shall speake for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that was blinde, and said vnto him, Giue God the praise, wee know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered, and said, Whether hee be a sinner or no, I know not: One thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did hee to thee? How opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye did not heare: wherefore would you heare it againe? Will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reuiled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake vnto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Why herein

herein is a marueilous thing, that yee know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man bee a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde:

33 If this man were not of God, he could doe nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou wast altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? And they || cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, hee said vnto him, Doest thou beleeue on the Sonne of God?

36 Hee answered and said, Who is hee, Lord, that I might beleeue on him?

37 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou hast both seene him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And hee said, Lord, I beleeue: and hee worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Iesus said, For iudgement I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see, and that they which see, might be made blinde.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these wordes, and said vnto him, Are wee blinde also?

41 Iesus sayd vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye should haue no sinne: but now yee say, We see, therefore your sinne remaineth.

Or, excommunicated him.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the doore and the good shepheard. 24 Hee proueth by his workes that he is the Christ. 39 Hee escapeth the Iewes.

VErely, verely I say vnto you, He that entreth not by the doore into the sheepefold, but climeth vp some other way, the same is a thiefe, and a robber.

2 But hee that entreth in by the doore, is the sheepeheard of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and hee calleth his owne sheepe, by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when hee putteth foorth his owne sheepe, hee goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voyce.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him, for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This

6 This parable spake Jesus vnto them: but they
vnderstood not what things they were which he spake vn-
to them.
7 Then said Jesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely,
I say vnto you, I am the dooze of the sheepe.
8 All that euer came before mee, are theeues and rob-
bers: but the sheepe did not heare them.
9 I am the dooze: by me if any man enter in, he shall
be saued, and shall goe in and out, and find pasture.
10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, and to
kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life,
and that they might haue it more abundantly.
11 * I am the good Shpheard: the good shepheard
Esa.40.11 giueth his life for the sheepe.
Ezek.34.23 12 But hee that is an hireling and not the shepheard,
whose owne the sheepe are not, seeth the wolfe comming,
and leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth: and the wolfe catcheth
them, and scatteredh the sheepe.
13 The hireling fleeth, because hee is an hireling, and
careth not for the sheepe.
14 I am the good shepheard, and know my sheepe, and
am knowen of mine.
15 As the Father knoweth mee, euen so know I the
Father: and I lay downe my life for the sheepe.
16 And other sheepe I haue, which are not of this
fold: them also I must bring, and they shall heare my
Ezek.37.22 voyce; * and there shall be one fold, and one shepheard.
Esa.53.7,8 17 Therefore doeth my Father loue me, * because I
lay downe my life that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it from mee, but I lay it downe of
my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and I haue pow-
Gen.2.24 er to take it againe. * This commandement haue I re-
ceiued of my Father.
19 ¶ There was a diuision therefore againe among
the Iewes for these sayings.
20 And many of them sayd, Hee hath a deuill, and is
mad, why heare ye him?
21 Others said, These are not the words of him that
hath a deuill. Can a deuill open the eyes of the blinde?
Mac.4.59 22 ¶ And it was at Hierusalem the * feast of the dedi-
cation, and it was winter.
23 And Jesus walked in the Temple in Solomons
porch.
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said
hold vs vnto him, How long doest thou || make vs to doubt? If
suspence. thou be the Christ, tell vs plainely.

25 Jesus

25 Iesus answered them, I told you, and ye beleeued not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleeue not, because ye are not of my sheepe, as I sayd vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gaue them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to plucke them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Iewes tooke vp stones againe to stone him.

32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I shewed you from my Father; for which of those workes doe ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For a good worke wee stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, * Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are gods? *Psal. 82.6

35 If hee called them gods, vnto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say yee of him, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe: though ye beleeue not me, beleeue the workes: that yee may know and beleeue that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought againe to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away againe beyond Iordane, into the place where Iohn at first baptized: and there he abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus, foure dayes buried. 45 Many Iewes beleeue. 47 The high Priests and Pharisees gather a counsell against him.

Now

NOw a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha.

Mat. 26. 7. 2 (*It was that Mary which anoynted the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)

3 Therefore his sister sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou louest, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that, he said, This sickenesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When hee had heard therefore that hee was sicke, hee abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, saith he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe.

8 His disciples say vnto him, Master, the Iewes of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If any man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth because there is no light in him.

11 These things said hee, and after that, he saith vnto them: Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe, that I may awake him out of sleepe.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, hee shall doe well.

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead:

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent yee may beleeue) neuertheleſſe, let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then saide Thomas, which is called Didimus, vnto his fellow disciples, Let vs also goe, that wee may die with him.

17 Then when Iesus came: he found that he had lien in the graue foure dayes already.

That is about two

18 (Now Bethany was nigh vnto Hierusalem, as about fifteene furlongs off)

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them, concerning their brother.

20 Then

20 Then Martha, assoone as hee heard that Iesus was comming, went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst beene here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know that euen now, whatsoeuer thou wilt aske of God, God will giue it.

23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha saith vnto him, *I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection and the *life: he that beleeueth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he liue.

26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in mee shall neuer die. Beleeuest thou this?

27 She saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art the Christ the Sonne of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, shee went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as shee heard that, she arose quickely, and came vnto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, Shee goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, shee fell downe at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst beene here, my brother had not died.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping which came with her, hee groaned in the spirit, and † was troubled,

34 And said: where haue ye laid him? They say vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, behold, how he loued him.

37 And some of them sayd, Could not this man, *which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue caused that euen this man should not haue died?

38 Iesus therefore againe groaning in himselfe, commeth to the graue. It was a caue, and a stone layd vpon it.

39 Iesus sayd, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith vnto him, Lord, by

* Luk. 14. 14. chap. 5. 29.

* Chap. 6. 35.

† Gr. he troubled himself.

* Chap. 9. 6.

this time he stinketh: for he hath beene dead foure dayes.
40 Iesus saith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou wouldest beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?
41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and sayd, Father, I thanke thee, that thou hast heard me.
42 And I knew that thou hearest mee alwayes: but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me.
43 And when hee had thus spoken, hee cryed with a loud voyce, Lazarus come foorth.
44 And he that was dead, came foorth, bound hand and foot with grauc-clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Iesus saith vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.
45 Then many of the Iewes which came to Marie, and had seene the things which Iesus did, beleeued on him.
46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisees, and told them what things Iesus had done.
47 ¶ Then gathered the chiefe Priests and the Pharisees a counsell, and said, What doe wee? for this man doeth many miracles.
48 If wee let him thus alone, all men will beleeue on him, and the Romans shall come, and take away both our place and Nation.
49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high Priest that same yeere, sayd vnto them, Ye know nothing at all,
Cha.18,14 50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.
51 And this spake he not of himselfe: but being high Priest that yeere, hee prophesied that Iesus should die for that nation:
52 And not for that nation onely, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.
53 Then from that day foorth, they tooke counsell together for to put him to death.
54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wilderness into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.
55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was nigh at hand, and

and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues, as they stood in the Temple, What thinke ye that he will not come to the Feast?

57 Now both the chiefe Priests and the Pharises, had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where hee were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Iesus excuseth Mary annointing his feete, 9 The people flocke to see Lazarus, 10 The hie Priests consult to kill him.

THen Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passeouer, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of oyntment, of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Iesus, and wiped his feet with her haire: and the house was filled with the odour of the oyntment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this oyntment solde for three hundred peuce, and giuen to the poore?

6 *This he said, not that he cared for the poore: but because he was a thiefe, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. *Cha. 13. 2

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore alway yee haue with you: but me yee haue not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Iewes therefore knew that hee was there: and they came not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom hee had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chiefe Priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him, many of the Iewes went away, and beleeued on Iesus.

12 ¶ *On the next day, much people that were come to the Feast, when they heard that Iesus was comming to Ierusalem, *Chap. 21.

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went forth to meet him, and cryed, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel, that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus, when hee had found a young asse, sate thereon, as it is written.

Zach.9.9. 15 * Feare not, daughter of Sion, behold thy King commeth sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things vnderstood not his disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his graue, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore saide among themselues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certaine Greekes among them, that came vp to worship at the Feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, wee would see Iesus.

22 Philip commeth and telleth Andrew: and againe Andrew and Philip told Iesus:

23 ¶ And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except a corne of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth foorth much fruit.

Mat.10.39 25 * He that loueth his life shall loose it, & hee that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 If any man serue me let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my seruant be: if any man serue me him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled, and what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but for this cause came I vnto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it againe.

29 The people therefore that stood by and heard it, sayd that it thundred: others sayd, an Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the Iudgement of this world: now shall the Prince of this world be cast out.

32 And

32 And I, if I bee lifted vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me.

33 (This hee sayd, signifying what death hee should die.)

34 The people answered him, * We haue heard out of the Law, that Christ abideth for euer: and how sayest thou, The Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is this Sonne of man? * Psal. 110

35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walke while yee haue the light, lest darkenesse come vpon you: for hee that walketh in darkenesse, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While yee haue light beleeue in the light, that yee may bee the children of light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and did hide himselfe from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they beleeued not on him:

38 That the saying of Esayas the Prophet might be fulfilled, which hee spake, * Lord, who hath beleeued our report? and to whom hath the arme of the Lord beene reuealed? * Isai. 53. 1 rom. 10. 1

39 Therefore they could not beleeue, because that Esaias said againe,

40 * Hee hath blinded their eyes, and heardened their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, nor vnderstand with their heart, and bee conuerted, and I should heale them. * Mat. 13.

41 These things said Esayas, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Neuertheleſſe, among the chiefe rulers also, many beleeued on him: but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should bee put out of the Synagogue.

43 * For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God. * Chap. 5.

44 ¶ Iesus cryed, and said, Hee that beleeueth on me, beleeueth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent mee.

46 * I am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth on me, should not abide in darkenesse. * Chap. 3.

47 * And if any man heare my words, and beleeue not, I iudge him not; for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world. * Chap. 3.

48 Hee that reiecteth me, and receiueth not my words, hath one that iudgeth him: * the word that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last day. * Mar. 16. 1

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father which sent mee, hee gaue me a commaundement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life euerlasting: whatsoeuer I speake therefore, euen as the Father said vnto me, so I speake.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Iesus washing his disciples feet, 14 exhorteth to humility and charitie: 18 Foretelleth that Iudas should betray him, 38 and Peter denie him.

Mat.26.2. NOw* before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that hee should depart out of this world vnto the Father, hauing loued his owne which were in the world, hee loued them vnto the end.

2 And supper being ended (the deuill hauing now put into the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne to betray him,)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that hee was come from God, and went to God:

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and tooke a towell, and girded himselfe.

5 After that, he powreth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then commeth hee to Simon Peter: and Peter saith vnto him, Lord doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete, Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also my hands and my head.

10 Iesus saith vnto him, He that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feete, but is cleane euery whit: and ye are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call mee Master and Lord, and ye say well; for so I am.

14 If

14 If I then your Lord and Master haue washed your
feete, ye also ought to wash one anothers feete.
15 For I haue giuen you an example, that yee should
doe, as I haue done to you.
16 * Verily, verily I say vnto you, The seruant is not *Mat 10.2
greater then his Lord, neither hee that is sent, greater chap.15.2
then he that sent him.
17 If yee know these things, happy are yee if yee doe
them.
18 ¶ I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue
chosen: but that the Scripture may bee fulfilled, * He *Psal.41.1
that eateth bread with mee, hath lift vp his heele against
mee.
19 || Now I tell you before it come, that when it is ||Or, from
come to passe, ye may beleeue that I am he. henceforth.
20 * Verily, verily I say vnto you, He that receiueth *Mat.10.
whomsoeuer I send, receiueth me: and he that receiueth
me, receiueth him that sent me.
21 * When Iesus had thus said, hee was troubled in *Mat.26.
Spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily I say vnto
you, that one of you shall betray me.
22 Then the Disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.
23 Now there was leaning on Iesus bosome one of
his Disciples, whom Iesus loued.
24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that hee
should aske who it should be of whom he spake.
25 He then lying on Iesus breast, saith vnto him, Lord,
who is it?
26 Iesus answered, Hee it is to whom I shall giue
a || soppe, when I haue dipped it. And when hee had dip- ||Or, morsel
ped the soppe, hee gaue it to Iudas Iscariot the sonne of
Simon.
27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him. Then
said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.
28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he
spake this vnto him.
29 For some of them thought, because Iudas had the
bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things
that we haue neede of against the feast: or that hee should
giue some thing to the poore.
30 Hee then hauing receiued the sop, went immediatly
out: and it was night.
31 ¶ Therefore when hee was gone out, Iesus said,
Now is the Sonne of man glorified: and God is glorified in him.

32 If God bee glorified in him; God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye
Chap. 7.34 shall seeke mee, * and as I said vnto the Iewes, whither I goe, ye cannot come: so now I say to you.

Cha. 15.17. 34 * A new commandement I giue vnto you, That
Mat. 19.18. yee loue one another, as I haue loued you, that ye also loue
Iohn 4.21. one another.

35 By this shal all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye haue loue one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why cannot I follow
Mat. 26.33. thee now? I will * lay downe my life for thy sake.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? Verily, verily I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples: 6 Professeth himselfe the Way, the Trueth, and the Life, and one with the Father.

LEt not your heart bee troubled: ye beleeue in God, beleeue also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe and prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I goe, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Iesus saith vnto him, I am the Way, the Trueth, and the Life: no man commeth vnto the Father, but by mee.

7 If yee had knowen mee, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue seene him.

8 Philip saith vnto him, Lord, shew vs the Father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus saith vnto him, Haue I beene so long time with you, and yet hast thou not knowen me, Philip? He that hath seene me, hath seene the Father, and how sayest thou then, Shew vs the Father?

10 Beleeuest

10 Beleeuest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes.

11 Beleeue mee that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or els beleeue me for the very workes sake.

12 Verily, verily I say vnto you, Hee that beleeueth on me, the workes that I doe, shall he doe also, and greater workes then these shall hee doe, because I goe vnto my Father.

13 *And whatsoeuer yee shall aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. *Matt. 7. 7

14 If ye shal aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 ¶ If ye loue me, keepe my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and hee shall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer,

17 Euen the Spirit of trueth, whom the world cannot receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but yee know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall bee in you.

18 I will not leaue you ‖ comfortlesse, I will come to you. ‖ Or, orphans.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth mee no more, but ye see me: because I liue, ye shall liue also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 Hee that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, he it is that loueth me: and he that loueth me, shall be loued of my Father, and I will loue him, and will manifest my selfe to him.

22 Iudas saith vnto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, If a man loue mee, hee will keepe my words: and my Father will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and make our abode with him.

24 Hee that loueth mee not, keepeth not my sayings, and the word which you heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, hee shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoeuer I haue said vnto you.

27 Peace

27 Peace I leaue with you, my peace I giue vnto you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Yee haue heard how I said vnto you, I goe away, and come againe vnto you. If yee loued me, yee would reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I haue told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Hereafter I will not talke much with you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me;

31 But that the world may know that I loue the Father: and as the Father gaue me commandement, euen so I doe: Arise, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 The consolation and mutuall loue betweene Christ and his members, vnder the parable of the vine. 18 Comfort in persecution.

I Am the true Vine, and my Father is the husbandman.
2 *Euery branch in mee that beareth not fruit, hee
*Mat.15.13. taketh away: and euery branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.
*Iohn 13.10 3 *Now yee are cleane through the word which I
haue spoken vnto you.
4 Abide in mee, and I in you. As the branch cannot
beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the Vine: no more
can ye, except ye abide in me.
5 I am the Vine, yee are the branches: He that abi-
deth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth foorth much
*Seuered fruit: for || without me ye can doe nothing.
*me.
6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch,
and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into
the fire, and they are burned.
7 If ye abide in mee, and my wordes abide in you, ye
shall aske what ye will, and it shall be done vnto you.
8 Herein is my Father glorified, that yee beare much
fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.
9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you:
continue ye in my loue.
10 If yee keepe my commandements, ye shall abide in
my loue, euen as I haue kept my Fathers commande-
ments, and abide in his loue.
11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy
might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

12 *This

12 * This is my commandement, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you. *Cha. 13. 1.thess.4.
13 Greater loue hath no man then this, that a man lay downe his life for his friends. 1.iohn 3.
14 Yee are my friends, if yee doe whatsoeuer I commaund you.
15 Henceforth I call you not seruants, for the seruant knoweth not what his lord doeth, but I haue called you friends: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, I haue made knowen vnto you.
16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and * ordeined you that yee should goe and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remaine: that whatsoeuer yee shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you. *Mat. 28.
17 These things I commaund you, that yee loue one another.
18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated me before it hated you.
19 If yee were of the world, the world would loue his owne: But because yee are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.
20 * Remember the word that I said vnto you, The seruant is not greater then the lord: if they haue persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they haue kept my saying, they will keepe yours also. *Cha. 13. matt. 10.
21 But all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent mee.
22 If I had not come, and spoken vnto them, they had not had sinne: but now they haue no || cloke for their sinne. ||Or, excu
23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.
24 If I had not done among them the workes which no other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they both seene, and hated both mee and my Father.
25 But this commeth to passe, that the word might bee fulfilled that is written in their Law, * They hated mee without a cause. *Psal. 3
26 * But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send vnto you from the Father, euen the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of mee. *Cha. 1. luke 24.
27 And yee also shall beare witnesse, because yee haue beene with me from the beginning.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his Disciples against tribulation, by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his owne resurrection and ascension. 23 Prayers in Christs Name acceptable to the Father.

THese things haue I spoken vnto you, that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea, the time commeth, that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that he doeth Gods seruice.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me.

4 But these things haue I tolde you, that when the time shall come, yee may remember that I tolde you of them. And these things I sayd not vnto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent mee, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Neuertheleſſe, I tell you the trueth, it is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, the Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when hee is come, he will || reprooue the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement. || convince.

9 Of sinne, because they beleeue not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I goe to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this world is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot beare them now:

13 Howbeit, when hee the Spirit of trueth is come, he will guide you into all trueth: for hee shall not speake of himselfe: but whatsoeuer hee shall heare, that shall hee speake, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me, for he shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

16 A little while, and yee shall not see me: and againe, a little while, and yee shall see mee: because I goe to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselues, What

What is this that he saith vnto vs, A little while, and yee shall not see mee: and againe, A little while, and yee shall see me: and because I goe to the Father.

18 They sayde therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they were desirous to aske him, and said vnto them, Doe yee enquire among your selues of that I said, A little while, and yee shall not see me: and againe, A little while, and ye shall see me?

20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, That ye shall weepe and lament, but the world shall reioyce: And ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into ioy.

21 A woman when shee is in trauaile, hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoone as shee is deliuered of the childe, shee remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore haue sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your heart shall reioyce, and your ioy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall aske me nothing: *Verely, verely I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer yee shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you.

24 Hitherto haue yee asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in ‖ proverbs: the time commeth, when I shall no more speake vnto you in ‖ proverbs, but I shall shew you plainely of the Father.

26 At that day yee shall aske in my Name: and I say not vnto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because yee haue loued mee, and haue beleeued that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: againe, I leaue the world, and goe to the Father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Loe, now speakest thou plainely, and speakest no ‖ proverbe.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should aske thee: By this wee beleeue that thou camest forth from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe ye now beleeue?

32 *Behold, the houre commeth, yea is now come, that yee shall be scattered, euery man to his ‖ owne, and shall leaue mee alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

* Mat. 7.7

‖ Or, parab

‖ Or, parab

‖ Or, para

* Mat. 26

‖ Or, his o home.

33 These

33 These things I haue spoken vnto you, that in mee ye might haue peace, in the world yee shall haue tribulation: but be of good cheere, I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him. 6 To preserue his Apostles. 11 in vnitie, 17 and trueth, 20 to glorifie them, and all other beleeuers

THese words spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee.

Mat.28.18 2 *As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to as many as thou hast giuen him.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Iesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou mee, with thine owne selfe, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue manifested thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them me; and they haue kept thy word.

7 Now they haue knowen that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the words which thou
Ioh.16.27. gauest mee, and they haue receiued them, * and haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and they haue beleeued that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world: but for them which thou hast giuen me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe through thine owne Name, those whom thou hast giuen me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest mee, I haue kept, and none of them is lost, but the sonne of perdition:
Psal.109.7. * that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speake in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues.

14 I

14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keepe them from the euill.

16 They are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth: thy word is trueth.

18 As thou hast sent mee into the world: euen so haue I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my selfe, that they also might be ‖ sanctified through the trueth:

‖ Or, truely sanctified.

20 Neither pray I for these alone; but for them also which shall beleeue on me through their word:

21 That they all may bee one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee, that they also may bee one in vs: that the world may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gauest me, I haue giuen them: that they may be one, euen as we are one:

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may bee made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

24 *Father, I will that they also whom thou hast giuen me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast giuen mee: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world.

*Cha. 12.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent me:

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Iudas betrayeth Iesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 12 Iesus is taken, aud led to Annas and Caiaphas, 28 and araigned before Pilate.

WHen Iesus had spoken these words, *he went forth with his disciples, ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which hee entred and his disciples.

*Mar. 26.

2 And Iudas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 *Iudas

Mat. 26.47. 3 * Iudas then hauing receiued a band of men, and officers from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, commeth thither with lanternes, and torches and weapons.

4 Iesus therefore knowing all things that should come vpon him, went foorth, and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith vnto them, I am he. And Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoone then as hee had sayd vnto them, I am hee, they went backeward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked hee them againe, whom seeke ye? And they sayd Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I haue told you that I am he: If therefore ye seeke me, let these goe their way:

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which hee spake * Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

Cha. 17.12

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drew it, and smote the high Priests seruant, and cut off his right eare: the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath giuen me, shall I not drinke it?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first, (for hee was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the hie Priest that same yeere. ||

And Annas
t Christ
nd vnto
iaphas the
h Priest.
rse 24.
Cha 11.50
Mat. 26.58

14 * Now Caiaphas was hee which gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Iesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was knowen vnto the high Priest, and went in with Iesus, into the palace of the high Priest.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple, which was knowen vnto the high Priest, & spake vnto her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then said the Damosell that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coales (for it was cold) and they warmed themselues: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.
20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I euer taught in the Synagogue, and in the Temple, whither the Iewes alwayes resort, and in secret haue I said nothing:
21 Why asketest thou me? Aske them which heard me, what I haue said vnto them: behold, they know what I said.
22 And when hee had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, stroke Iesus || with the palme of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so?
23 Iesus answered him, If I haue spoken euill, beare witnesse of the euill: but if well, why smitest thou me?
24 Now Annas had sent him bound vnto Caiaphas the high Priest.
25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe: * They said therefore vnto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.
26 One of the seruants of the high Priestes (being his kinsman, whose eare Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?
27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crew.
28 ¶ * Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas vnto || the hall of iudgement: And it was early, * and they themselues went not into the iudgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eate the Passeouer.
29 Pilate then went out vnto them and said, What accusation bring you against this man?
30 They answered, and said vnto him, If he were not a malefactor, wee would not haue deliuered him vp vnto thee.
31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take ye him & iudge him according to your law. The Iewes therefore said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death:
32 * That the saying of Iesus might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die.
33 * Then Pilate entred into the iudgement hall againe, and called Iesus, and said vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?
34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy selfe? or did others tell it thee of me?
35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iewe? thine owne nation, and the chiefe Priests haue deliuered thee vnto mee: What hast thou done?

|| Or, with a rod.
* Mat. 26. 57
* Mat. 26. 6
* Mat. 27. 2
|| Or, Pilate house.
* Acts 10. 2
* Mat. 20. 1
* Mat. 27. 11

36 Iesus answered, My Kingdome is not of this world: If my kingdome were of this world, then would my seruants fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King. To this end was I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate saith vnto him, What is trueth? And when he had said this, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and saith vnto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

Mat. 27. 15 39 * But ye haue a custome that I should release vnto you one at the Passeouer: will ye therefore that I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?

Mat. 27. 26 40 * Then cryed they all againe, saying, not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thornes and beaten 16 Deliuered to be crucified 18 He dieth. 38 He is buried.

Actes 3. 14 THen * Pilate therefore tooke Iesus, and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Haile king of the Iewes: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth againe, and saith vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that yee may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing the crowne of thornes, and the purple robe: and Pilate saith vnto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chiefe Priests therefore and officers saw him, they cryed out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take yee him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a law, and by our law hee ought to die, because hee made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, hee was the more afraid,

9 And went againe into the Iudgement hall, and saith vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him no answere.

10 Then

10 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not, that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against mee, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Iewes cryed out, saying, If thou let this man goe, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoever maketh himselfe a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, hee brought Iesus foorth, and sate downe in the Iudgement seate, in a place that is called the Pauement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre, and he saith vnto the Iewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cryed out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him, Pilate saith vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The chiefe Priests answered, We haue no King but Cesar.

16 * Then deliuered he him therefore vnto them to be crucified: and they tooke Iesus and led him away. *Mat. 27.31

17 And hee bearing his crosse, went foorth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha;

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. And the writing was, IESVS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nigh to the citie, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the chiefe Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes: but that hee said, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

23 ¶ * Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments, (and made foure parts, to euery souldier a part) and also his coat: Now the coat was without seame, ‖ woven from the top throughout. *Mat. 27.35 ‖ Or, wrought

24 They said therefore among themselues, Let not vs rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall bee, * that the *Psal. 22.18

Scripture might bee fulfilled, which saith, They parted my rayment among them, & for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of ‖Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

Or, Clopas.

26 When Iesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom hee loued, hee saith vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that houre that disciple tooke her vnto his own home.

28 ¶ After this, Iesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, * that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

Psal. 69.22

29 Now there was set a vessell full of vineger: And they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it vpon hysope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Iesus therefore had receiued the vineger, he said, it is finished, and hee bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day (for that Sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might bee broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legges.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it bare record, & his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleeue.

36 For these things were done * that the Scripture should be fulfilled, * A bone of him shall not be broken.

* Num. 9.12
* Exod 12.46

37 * And againe another Scripture saith, They shall looke on him whom they pierced.

* Psal. 34.21
* Zac. 12.10

38 ¶ * And after this, Ioseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate that hee might take away the body of Iesus, and Pilate gaue him leaue: he came therefore & tooke the body of Iesus.

* Mat. 27.57.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Iesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

40 Then

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wound it in linnen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Iewes is to bury:

41 Now in the place where hee was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laid.

42 There laid they Iesus therefore, because of the Iewes Preparation day, for the Sepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary commeth to the Sepulchre; 3 So doe Peter and Iohn, 11 Iesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his Disciples. 24 Thomas his incredulitie and confession.

THe *first day of the weeke, commeth Mary Magdalene earely when it was yet darke, vnto the Sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the Sepulchre. *Mat. 28. 1 marke 16.

2 Then shee runneth, and commeth to Simon Peter, and to the *other disciple whom Iesus loued, & saith vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the Sepulchre, and we know not where they haue laid him. *Cha. 13. 2 and 21, 20

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and that other disciple, and came to the Sepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the Sepulchre.

5 And hee stooping downe and looking in, saw the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then commeth Simon Peter following him, and went into the Sepulchre, and seeth the linnen clothes lie,

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first at the Sepulchre, and he saw, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that hee must rise againe from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the Sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped downe, and looked into the Sepulchre.

12 And seeth two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had layen;

13 And they say vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou?

She saith vnto them, Because they haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, shee turned her selfe backe, and saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, Why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardener, saith vnto him, Sir, if thou haue borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Mary. She turned her selfe, and saith vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her.

Mat. 16. 14. 19 ¶ *Then the same day at euening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus, and stood in the midst, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed vnto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace bee vnto you: As my Father hath sent me, euen so send I you.

22 And when hee had said this, he breathed on them, and saith vnto them, receiue ye the holy Ghost.

Mat. 18. 18. 23 ' Whosoeuer sins ye remit, they are remitted vnto them, and whosoeuer sinnes ye retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord. But hee said vnto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeue.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: Then came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be vnto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but beleeuing.

28 And

28 And Thomas answered, and sayd vnto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Iesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene mee, thou hast beleeued: blessed are they that haue not seene, and yet haue beleeued.

30 ¶ *And many other signes truely did Iesus in the presence of his Disciples, which are not written in this booke: *Cha 21.

31 But these are written, that yee might beleeue that Iesus is the Christ the Sonne of God, and that beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appeareth to his disciples being a fishing 12 He dineth with them: 15 Commaundeth Peter to feede his Lambes, 18 and foretelleth Peters death.

AFter these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and on this wise shewed he himselfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaneel of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter sayth vnto them, I goe a fishing. They say vnto him, We also goe with thee. They went forth and entred into a ship immediately, and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Then Iesus saith vnto them, ‖ Children, haue yee any meate? They answered him, No. ‖Or, Sirs.

6 And he said vnto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shal finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that Disciple whom Iesus loued, sayth vnto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, hee girt his fishers coat vnto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himselfe into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little shippe (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coales there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus saith vnto them, Bring of the fish, which yee haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fiftie and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, and giueth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen frō the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, sonne of Ionas, loueſt thou me more then these? Hee saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 Hee saith to him againe the second time, Simon, sonne of Ionas, loueſt thou me? Hee saith vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

17 Hee said vnto him the third time, Simon, sonne of Ionas, loueſt thou mee? Peter was grieued, because hee sayd vnto him the third time, Loueſt thou mee? And he said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus saith vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

18 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, thou shalt stretch foorth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith vnto him, Follow me.

a.13.23 20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple *whom
20.2. Iesus loued, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Iesus, Lord, and what shall this man doe?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, If I will that hee tary till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that Disciple should not die: yet Iesus sayd not vnto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tary till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and wee know that his testimony is true.

Chap.20. 25 * And there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should bee written euery one, I suppose that euen the world it selfe could not containe the bookes that should be written. Amen.

¶ THE

¶THE ACTES OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAP. I.

1 A repetition of part of Christs history before and after his passion. 9 Of his ascension. 26 The Apostles chuse Matthias in the place of Iudas.

THe former treatise haue I made, O Theophilus, of all that Iesus began both to doe and teach,

2 Untill the day, in which he was taken vp, after that hee through the holy Ghost had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also hee shewed himselfe aliue after his passion, by many infallible proofes, being seene of them fortie dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdome of God.

4 And ‖ being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, * which, saith he, ye haue heard of me.

‖ *Or, eating together with them.*

*Luk. 24.

*Matt. 3.

5 * For Iohn truely baptized with water, but yee shall bee baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore againe the kingdome to Israel?

7 And hee said vnto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 * But yee shall receiue ‖ power after that the holy Ghost is come vpon you, and yee shall be witnesses vnto mee, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth.

*Chap. 2.

‖ *Or, the power of the holy Ghost coming vpon you.*

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, hee was taken vp, and a cloude receiued him out of their sight.

*Luk. 24.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as hee went vp, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand yee gazing vp into heauen? This same Iesus, which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, in like maner as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 Then

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount called Oliuet, which is from Hierusalem a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper roome, where abode both Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas the brother of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the midst of the Disciples, and said, (The number of names together were about an hundred and twenty.)

16 Men and brethren, this Scripture must needes
al. 41.9. haue beene fulfilled, * which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before concerning Iudas, which was guide to them that tooke Iesus.

17 For hee was numbred with vs, and had obtained part of this ministery.

18 * Now this man purchased a field with the reward
mt. 27.7. of iniquity, and falling headlong, hee burst asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was knowen to all the dwellers at Hierusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Acceldama, that is, The field of blood.

20 * For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his
al. 69.26. habitation be desolate, & let no man dwell therein: * And
al. 109.7. his || Bishopricke let another take.
, office or
ge.

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus went in and out among vs;

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto that same day that he was taken vp from vs, must one bee ordained to be a witnesse with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Ioseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and sayd, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That hee may take part of this ministery and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that hee might goe to his owne place.

26 And they gaue forth their lots, and the lot fell vpon Matthias, and hee was numbred with the eleuen Apostles.

CHAP.

CHAP, II.

1 The Apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking diuers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others, whom Peter diproouoeth. 37 He baptizeth those that were conuerted.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And sudden ly there came a sound from heauen as of a rushing mighty winde, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared vnto them cloven tongues like as a fire, and it sate vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem, Iewes, deuout men, out of every nation vnder heauen.

6 Now † when this was noyse abroad, the multitude came together, and were ‖ confounded, because that every man heard them speake in his owne language.

† *Gr. when this voice made.*

‖ *Or, troubled in minde.*

7 And they were all amazed, and marueiled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake, Galileans?

8 And how heare we every man in our owne tongue, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Iudea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Iewes, and Proselites,

11 Creetes, and Arabians, we doe heare them speake in our tongues the wonderfull workes of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing vp with the eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, and all ye that dwell at Hierusalem, bee this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto my words:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.

16 * But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Ioel:

*Ioel 2. Isai. 44.

17 And

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes (sayth God,) I will powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh: and your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames:

18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaidens I will powre out in those dayes of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and signes in the earth beneath: blood and fire, and vapour of smoke.

el 2.31. 20 * The Sunne shall be turned into darkenesse, and the Moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

m.10.13 21 * And it shall come to passe, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saued.

22 Yee men of Israel, heare these words, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approoued of God among you, by miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selues also know:

23 Him, being deliuered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, yee haue taken, and by wicked hands, haue crucified and slaine:

24 Whom God hath rayled vp, hauing loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

l.16.9. 25 For Dauid speaketh concerning him, * I foresaw the Lord, alwayes before my face, for hee is on my right hand, that I should not bee mooued.

26 Therefore did my heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad: Moreouer also, my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thy holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made knowen vnto mee the wayes of life, thou shalt make mee full of ioy with thy countenance.

I may. 29 Men and brethren, || let me freely speake vnto you

in 2.10 * of the Patriarch Dauid, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with vs, vnto this day:

l.132.11 30 Therefore being a Prophet, * and knowing that God had sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loynes, according to the flesh, hee would rayse vp Christ, to sit on his throne:

31 Hee seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of

l.16.11. Christ, * that his soule was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32 This

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and hauing receiued of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, hee hath shed foorth this which yee now see and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauens, but he saith himselfe, * The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, * Psal. 11

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstoole.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Iesus, whom ye haue crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said vnto Peter, and to the rest of the Apostles. Men and brethren, What shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Repent, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Iesus Christ, for the remission of sinnes, and ye shall receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, euen as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did he testifie and exhort, saying, Saue your selues from this vntoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added vnto them about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued were together, and had all things common,

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery man had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread || from house to house, did eate their meate with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart, || Or, at

47 Praysing God, and hauing fauour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church dayly such as should be saued.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter with Iohn restore a lame man to his feete. 12 How the

The cure was wrought. 13 The people are reprehended, 19 and exhorted to repentance.

NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple at the houre of prayer, being the ninth houre.
2 And a certaine man lame from his mothers wombe was carried, whom they layde daily at the gate of the Temple which is called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.
3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn about to goe into the Temple, asked an almes.
4 And Peter fastening his eyes vpon him, with Iohn, said, Looke on vs.
5 And he gaue heede vnto them, expecting to receiue some thing of them.
6 Then Peter said, Siluer and golde haue I none, but such as I haue, giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.
7 And he tooke him by the right hand, and lift him vp: and immediately his feete and ancle bones receiued strength.
8 And he leaping vp, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.
9 And all the people saw him walking, and praysing God.
10 And they knew that it was hee that sate for almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened vnto him.
11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and Iohn, all the people ranne together vnto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.
12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, hee answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke ye so earnestly on vs, as though by our owne power or holinesse we had made this man to walke?
13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Iacob, the God of our Fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom yee deliuered vp, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him goe.
14 *But ye denied the Holy One, and the Iust, and desired a murtherer to be granted vnto you,
15 And killed the ‖ Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.
16 And his Name, through faith in his Name, hath made

*27.20

‖ Author.

made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath giuen him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore, and be conuerted, that your sinnes may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you,

21 Whom the heauen must receiue, vntill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 * For Moses truely said vnto the Fathers, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you of your brethren, like vnto me; him shall yee heare in all things whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you. * Deu.18. chap.7.37

23 And it shall come to passe, that euery soule which will not heare that Prophet, shall bee destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the Prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Couenant, which God made with our fathers, * saying vnto Abraham, And in thy seede shall all the kinreds of the earth be blessed. *Gen.12.3

26 Vnto you first, God hauing raised vp his Sonne Iesus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away euery one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers offended with Peters Sermon, 4 imprison him and Iohn. 5 They examine them. 8 Peters boldnesse. 13 They are commaunded to preach no more in Christs Name.

AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priestes and the || captaine of the Temple, and the Sadducees came vpon them; ||Or, Ruler.

2 Being grieued that they taught the people, and preached through Iesus, the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold vnto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 How-

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that the Rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the high Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the high Priest, were gathered together at Hierusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter, filled with the holy Ghost, sayde vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deede done to the impotent man, by what meanes he is made whole:

10 Bee it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, euen by him, doeth this man stand here before you whole.

Psal. 118. Mat. 21. 11 * This is the stone which was set at naught of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for there is none other name vnder heauen giuen among men, whereby we must be saued.

13 Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and perceiued that they were vnlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled, and they tooke knowledge of them, that they had beene with Iesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed, standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to goe aside out of the councell, they conferred among themselues,

16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath beene done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and wee cannot denie it.

17 But that it spreade no further among the people, let vs straitly threaten them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them, not to speake at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered, and sayde vnto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken vnto you, more then vnto God, iudge ye.

20 For wee cannot but speake the things which wee haue seene and heard.

21 So

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above fortie yeeres olde, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And being let goe, they went to their owne company, and reported all that the chiefe Priests and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyce to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, and the Sea, and all that in them is,

25 *Who by the mouth of thy seruant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things? *Psal. 2. 1.

26 The Kings of the earth stood vp, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a trueth against thy holy child Iesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herode and Pontius Pilate with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For to doe whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatnings, and grant vnto thy seruants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heale: and that signes and wonders may be done by the Name of thy holy childe Iesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one soule: neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus, and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: For as many as were possessours of lands, or houses, solde them, and brought the prices of the things that were solde,

35 And laid them downe at the Apostles feet: And distribution was made vnto euery man according as he had neede.

36 And Ioses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The sonne of consolation) a Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Having land, solde it and brought the money, and laid it at the Apostles feete.

CHAP. V.

1 10 Ananias and Sapphira fall downe dead. 12 The Apostles worke many miracles. 18 They are imprisoned, 19 deliuered by an Angel, 33 in danger to bee killed, but Gamaliel keepeth them aliue.

BUt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira, his wife, solde a possession,

2 And kept backe part of the price, his wife also being priuie to it, and brought a certaine part, and laid it at the Apostles feete.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart || to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keepe backe part of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? why hast thou conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost: and great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the yong men arose, wound him vp, and caried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three houres after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered vnto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, How is it that ye haue agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold the feete of them that haue buried thy husband, are at the doore, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she downe straightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: And the young men came in, and found her dead, and carying her foorth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and vpon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the handes of the Apostles, were many signes

Or, to deceiue.

signes and wonders wrought among the people. (And they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: But the people magnified them.

14 And beleeuers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sicke || into the streetes, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might ouershadow some of them.

|| Or, in euery streete.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed euery one.

17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Saddnees) and were filled with || indignation,

|| Or, enuie.

18 And laid their handes on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them foorth, and said,

20 Goe, stand and speake in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councell together, and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the Prison to haue them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doores, but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high Priests, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe Priests heard these things, they doubted of them wherevnto this would grow.

25 Then came one, and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom yee put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence: (For they feared the people, lest they should haue beene stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the high Priest asked them,

28 Saying, * Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this Name? And behold, ye haue

* Chap. 4. 18

filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 ¶ Then Peter, and the other Apostles answered, and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised vp Iesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to bee a Prince and a Sauiour, for to giue repentance to Israel, and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

32 And wee are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and tooke counsell to slay them.

34 Then stood there vp one in the Councill, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of Law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles foorth a little space,

35 And said vnto them, Ye men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what yee intend to doe as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp Theudas, boasting himselfe to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundred, ioynes themselues: who was slaine, and all, as many as ‖ obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

Or, beleeued

37 After this man arose vp Iudas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: hee also perished, and all, euen as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say vnto you, Refraine from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell or this worke bee of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it bee of God, yee cannot ouerthrow it, lest haply ye be found euen to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the Councell, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And dayly in the Temple, and in euery house, they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Apostles care for the poore, & for preaching the word.

3 Seuen

3 Seuen men chosen for Deacons, 5 of whom Steuen is one, 12 who is taken, 13 and falsely accused.

AND in those dayes, when the number of the disciples was multiplyed, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the dayly ministration.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples vnto them, and said, It is not reason that wee should leaue the word of God, and serue tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke yee out among you seuen men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisedome, whom we may appoynt ouer this business.

4 But we will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte of Antioch,

6 Whom they set before the Apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Ierusalem greatly, & a great company of the Priests were obedient vnto the faith.

8 And Simon full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which is called the Synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Steuen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisedome and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, Wee haue heard him speake blasphemous wordes against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred vp the people, and the Elders, and the Scribes, and came vpon him, and caught him, and brought him to the Councill,

13 And set vp false witnesses, which sayd, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous wordes against this holy place, and the Law.

14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ‖ Customes which Moses deliuered vs. ‖Or, rights

15 And all that sate in the Councill, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had beene the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 Steuen answereth to his accusation. 51 Hee reprehendeth the peoples rebellion and murdering of Christ. 54 Therefore they stone him to death.

THen said the high Priest, Are these things so?
2 And he said, Men brethren, and fathers, hearken: The God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before hee dwelt in Charran,
Gen.12.1. 3 And said vnto him, * Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.
4 Then came hee out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, hee remooued him into this land wherein yee now dwell.
5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foote on: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet he had no childe.
6 And God spake on this wise, that his seede should sojourne in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreate them euill foure hundred yeeres.
7 And the nation to whom they shall bee in bondage, will I iudge, sayd God: and after that shall they come forth, and serue me in this place.
Gen.17.9. 8 * And hee gaue him the couenant of Circumcision,
Gen.21.3. * and so Abraham begate Isaac, and circumcised him the
Gen.25.26 eight day: * and Isaac begate Jacob, * and Jacob begate
Gen.29.31 the twelue Patriarchs.
Gen.37.28 9 * And the Patriarchs mooued with enuie, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,
Gen.41.37 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, * and gaue him fauour and wisedome in the sight af Pharao king of Egypt: and he made him gouernour ouer Egypt and all his house.
11 Now there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt, and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.
Gen.42.1. 12 * But when Jacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.
Gen.45.4, 13 * And at the second time Joseph was made knowen to his brethren, and Josephs kindred was made knowen vnto Pharao.
14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him,

him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteene soules. *Gen 4
15 *So Iacob went downe into Egypt, * and died, *Gen. 49
he and our fathers,
16 And were caried over into Sichem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a summe of money of the sonnes of Emor the father of Sichem.
17 But when the time of the promise drewe nigh, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,
18 Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.
19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and evill intreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.
20 *In which time Moses was borne, and * was ‖exceeding faire, and nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths: *Exod. 2. *Heb. 11. ‖Or, faire God.
21 And when hee was cast out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.
22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.
23 And when he was full fortie yeeres old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.
24 *And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and auenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian: *Exod. 2
25 For hee supposed his brethren would haue vnderstood, how that God by his hand would deliuer them, but they vnderstood not.
26 *And the next day hee shewed himselfe vnto them as they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren, Why doe yee wrong one to another? *Exod. 2
27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a Ruler and a Iudge ouer vs?
28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?
29 Then fled Moses at his saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.
30 *And when fortie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the wildernesse of mount Sinai, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. *Exod 3.
31 When Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight, and as he drew neere to behold it, the voyce of the Lord came vnto him,
32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of

Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then sayd the Lord to him, Put off thy shooes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe, to deliuer them: And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a iudge? the same did God send to bee a ruler and a deliuerer by the hands of the Angel which appeared to him in the bush.

Exod. 7. 9 36 * He brought them out, after that hee had shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the red
Exod. 16. 1 Sea, * and in the wildernesse forte yeeres.

Deu. 18. 15 37 ¶ This is that Moses which said vnto the chil-
7, as my dren of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise
7. vp vnto you of your brethren, || like vnto me: him shall ye
heare.

Exod. 19. 3 38 * This is he that was in the Church in the wilder-
nesse with the Angel, which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who receiued the liuely Oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt,

Exod. 32. 1 40 * Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods to goe be-
fore vs: for as for this Moses, which brought vs out of the land of Egypt, we wote not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the works of their owne hands.

42 Then God turned, and gaue them vp to worship
Amos 5. 25 the hoste of heauen, * as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, O yee house of Israel, haue yee offered to me slaine beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of forte yeeres in the wildernesse?

43 Yea, yee tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Rempham, figures which yee made, to worship them: and I will cary you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the Tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernesse, as he had appointed, speaking vnto Mo-
Exo. 25. 40 ses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

45 Which

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drane out before the face of our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid,

46 Who found fauour before God, and desired to find a Tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 *But Solomon built him an house. *1. Chro. 12.

48 *Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in Temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet, *Ch2. 17

49 Heauen is my throne, and earth is my footestoole: What house will yee build me, saith the Lord? Or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Yee stiffenecked and vncircumcised in heart and eares, yee doe alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so doe ye.

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? And they haue slaine them which shewed before of the commig of the Iust one, of whom yee haue beene now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who haue receiued the Law by the disposition of Angels, and haue not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked vp stedfastly into heauen, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens opened, and the Sonne of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cryed out with a lowde voyce, and stopped their eares, and ran vpon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the Citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid downe their clothes at a young mans feete, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, calling vpon God, and saying, Lord Iesus receiue my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had sayd this, he fell asleepe.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The Church is planted in Samaria by Philip, 14 confirmed and enlarged by Peter and Iohn. 26 Philip is sent to baptize the Ethiopian Eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered

scattered abroad throughout the regions of Iudea, and Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 And deuout men caried Stenen to his buriall, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, hee made hauocke of the Church, entring into euery house, and hailing men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went euery where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gaue heede vnto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with loud voyce, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giuing out that himselfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeued Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, & the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also: and when he was baptized, hee continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the miracles, and signes which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles which were at Hierusalem, heard that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Who when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was fallen vpon none of them: onely they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the Apostles hands, the holy Ghost was giuen, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 But

20 But Peter said vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may bee forgiuen thee.

23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, and sayd, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the Angell of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe toward the South, vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And hee arose, and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authoritie vnder Candace Queene of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Hierusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his charet, read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Goe neere, and ioyne thy selfe to this charet.

30 And Philip ranne thither to him, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and said, Vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide mee? And he desired Philip, that hee would come vp, and sit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture which hee read, was this, * He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before the shearer, so opened hee not his mouth: *Isai. 53

33 In his humiliation, his iudgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? For his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and sayd, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water: and the Eunuch said, See, here is water, what doeth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered, and said, I beleeue that Iesus Christ is the Sonne of God.

38 And hee commanded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: and hee went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing thorow hee preached in all the Cities, till hee came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is stricken downe to the earth, 10 is called to the Apostleship, 18 baptized by Ananias 20 He preacheth Christ.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the Disciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus, to the Synagogues, that if hee found any of this way, whether they were men or women, hee might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 And as hee iourneyed, hee came neere Damascus, and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And hee fell to the earth, and heard a voyce saying vnto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And hee sayd, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord sayd, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

6 And hee trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou haue me to doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shall be told thee what thou must doe.

7 And the men which iourneyed with him, stood speechlesse, hearing a voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, hee saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And hee was three dayes without sight, and neither did eate, nor drinke.

10 ¶ And

10 ¶ And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus. named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am heere, Lord.

11 And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Iudas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ananias, comming in and putting his hand on him, that he might receiue his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill hee hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem:

14 And here hee hath authoritie from the chiefe Priests, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for hee is a chosen vessell vnto mee, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things hee must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him, sayd, Brother Saul the Lord (euen Iesus that apeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent mee that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had beene scales, and hee receiued sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when hee had receiued meat, hee was strengthened. Then was Saul certaine dayes with the Disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway hee preached Christ in the Synagogues, That he is the Sonne of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and sayd, Is not this hee that destroyed them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound vnto the chiefe Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, prooving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell to kill him,

24 * But their laying awaite was knowen of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him. * 2. C. 11. 32.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and let him downe by the wall in a basket.

26 And

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe to the Disciples, but they were all afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared vnto them how hee had seene the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how hee had preached boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And hee was with them comming in, and going out at Hierusalem.

29 And hee spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him downe to Cesarea, and sent him foorth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest throughout all Iudea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed thorowout all quarters, hee came downe also to the Saints which dwelt at Lydda:

33 And there hee found a certaine man named Aeneas, which had kept his bedde eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 And Peter said vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Ioppa, a certaine Disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: This woman was full of good workes, and almes deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that shee was sicke, and died: whom when they had washed, they laide her in an vpper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring him that hee would not ‖ delay to come to them.

‖ Gr. is-

39 Then Peter arose and went with them: when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber: And all the widewes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made, while shee was with them.

40 But

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And shee opened her eyes, and when shee saw Peter, shee sate vp.

41 And hee gaue her his hand, and lift her vp, and when he had called the Saints and widowes, presented her aliue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Joppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he tarried many dayes in Joppa with one Simon a Tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius sendeth for Peter, 11 who by a vision 15 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles. 34 Peter preacheth 44 The holy Ghost falleth on the hearers. 48 They are baptized.

THere was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a Centurion of the band, called the Italian band,

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 Hee saw in a vision euidently about the ninth houre of the day, an Angell of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 And when hee looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And hee said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 Hee lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose house is by the Sea side; hee shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, hee called two of his houshold seruants, and a deuout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when hee had declared all these things vnto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow, as they went on their iourney, and drew nigh vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixt houre.

10 And hee became very hungry, and would haue eaten: But while they made ready, hee fell into a trance.

11 And

11 And saw heauen opened, and a certaine vessell descending vnto him, as it had beene a great sheet, knit at the foure corners, and let downe to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of foure footed beasts of the earth, & wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the aire.

13 And there came a voyce vnto him, Rise, Peter: kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is common or vncleane,

15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrise: and the vessell was receiued vp againe into heauen.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, should meane: behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made inquirie for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said vnto him, behold three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, doubting nothing: for I haue sent them.

21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom yee seeke: what is the cause wherefore yee are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the Centurion, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from God by an holy Angel to send for thee into his house, and to heare wordes of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entered into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and neere friends.

25 And as Peter was comming in, Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I my selfe also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, hee went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know how that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to keepe company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed mee, that I should not call any man common or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without gainesaying, assoone as I was sent for. I aske therefore for what intent ye haue sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Foure dayes agoe I was fasting vntill this houre, and at the ninth houre I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before mee in bright clothing.

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a Tanner by the Sea side, who when hee cometh, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, * Of a truth I perceiue that God is no respecter of persons:

35 But in euery nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent vnto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (he is Lord of all.)

37 That word, (I say) you know which was published throughout all Iudea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God annointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which hee did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew, and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but vnto witnesses chosen before of God, euen to vs who did eat and drinke with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie that it is he which was ordeined of God to be the iudge of quicke and dead.

* Deu. 10. 17. rom. 2. 11. 1. pet. 1. 17.

ere. 31. 34. 43 To him giue all the Prophets witnesse, that
cha. 7. 18. through his Name whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these wordes, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 And hee commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter accused for going into the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The Gospel is spread. 26 At Antioch the disciples first called Christians.

AND the Apostles, and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God,

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they that were of the circumcision, contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order vnto them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certaine vessell descend, as it had beene a great sheet, let downe from heauen by foure corners, and it came euen to me.

6 Vpon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the ayre.

7 And I heard a voyce, saying vnto mee, Arise Peter, slay and eate.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered mee againe from heauen, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawen vp againe into heauen.

11 And

11 And behold, immediatly there were three men al-
ready come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesa-
rea vnto me.
12 And the Spirit bade mee goe with them, nothing
doubting: Moreouer, these sixe brethren accompanied me,
and we entred into the mans house:
13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an Angel in his
house, which stood and said vnto him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:
14 Who shall tell thee wordes, whereby thou, and all
thy house shall be saued.
15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on
them, * as on vs at the beginning. *Chap. 2. 4.
16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how
that he said, * Iohn indeede baptized with water: but yee *Iohn 1. 26.
shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.
17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them the like gift
as hee did vnto vs, who beleeued on the Lord Iesus
Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?
18 When they heard these things, they held their
peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to
the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.
19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad vpon *Chap. 8. 1.
the persecution which arose about Steuen, trauailed as
farre as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching
the word to none, but to the Iewes onely.
20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cy-
rene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake vnto
the Grecians, preaching the Lord Iesus.
21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a
great number beleeued, and turned to the Lord.
22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came vnto the
eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem, and they
sent foorth Barnabas, that he should goe as farre as An-
tioch.
23 Who when hee came, and had seene the grace of
God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose
of heart they would cleaue vnto the Lord.
24 For hee was a good man, and full of the holy
Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added vnto
the Lord.
25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seeke
Saul.
26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto
Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeere they
assembled themselues ‖ with the Church, and taught ‖ Or, in the Church.

much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these dayes came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antioch.

28 And there stood vp one of them, named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should bee great dearth throughout all the world: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his abilitie, determined to send reliefe vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the Elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth Iames, imprisoneth Peter, who is deliuered by an Angel. 20 Herods pride and miserable death.

NOw about that time, Herod the King || stretched forth his hands to vexe certaine of the Church.

Or, began.

2 And hee killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Iewes, he proceeded further to take Peter also, (Then were the dayes of vnleauened bread.)

4 And when hee had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to keepe him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but prayer was made || without ceasing of the Church vnto God for him.

Or, instant and earnest prayer was made.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon him, and a light shined in the prison: and hee smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise vp quickly. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales: And so he did. And hee saith vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the Angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came vnto the yron gate that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them of his owne accord: and they went out, and passed on thorow one streete, and forthwith the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, hee sayd, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Iewes.

12 And when hee had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a damsell came || to hearken, named Rhoda.

|| Or, to a[illegible] who was t[illegible]

14 And when shee knew Peters voyce, she opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and tolde how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said vnto her, Thou art mad. But shee constantly affirmed that it was euen so. Then sayd they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the doore, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckening vnto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared vnto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison: And hee sayd, Goe, shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now assoone as it was day, there was no small stirre among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, hee examined the keepers, and commanded that they should bee put to death. And hee went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 ¶ And Herod || was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and hauing made Blastus † the Kings Chamberlaine their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings countrey.

|| Or, bare [illegible] hostile min[illegible] intending warre.

† Or that [illegible] ouer the k[illegible] bed-chamb[illegible]

21 And vpon a set day, Herod arayed in royall apparell, sate vpon his throne, & made an Oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, It is the voyce of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because hee gaue not God the glory, and hee was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.
25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their || ministery, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

Or, charge
Cap. 11. 29.
Q.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas chosen to goe to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the Sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch. 42 The Gentiles beleeue. 45 The Iewes blaspheme.

NOw there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certaine Prophets and Teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had beene || brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul.

Or, Herods
ster brother

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate mee Barnabas and Saul for the worke whereunto I haue called them.
3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.
4 ¶ So they being sent foorth by the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.
5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their Minister.
6 And when they had gone thorow the ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine Sorcerer, a false prophet, a Iew, whose name was Bariesus:
7 Which was with the Deputy of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.
8 But Elymas the Sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turne away the Deputy from the faith.
9 Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,
10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischiefe, thou child of the deuill, thou enemie of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the right wayes of the Lord?
11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the Sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darknesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when hee saw what was done, beleeued, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and Iohn departing from them, returned to Hierusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckning with his hand, sayd, Men of Israel, and yee that feare God, giue audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people * when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, * and with an high arme brought he them out of it.

18 * And about the time of fortie yeeres † suffered hee their maners in the wildernesse.

19 And when hee had destroyed seuen nations in the land of Canaan, * he diuided their land to them by lot:

20 And after that * he gaue vnto them Iudges, about the space of foure hundred and fiftie yeeres, vntill Samuel the Prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a King, * and God gaue vnto them Saul the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of fortie yeeres.

22 And when he had remooued him, * he raised vp vnto them, Dauid to bee their King, to whom also hee gaue testimony, and sayd, * I haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 * Of this mans seede hath God, according to his promise, raised vnto Israel a Sauiour, Iesus:

24 * When Iohn had first preached before his comming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as Iohn fulfilled his course, he sayd, * Whom thinke yee that I am? I am not hee. But behold, there commeth one after mee, whose shoes of his feete I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stocke of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

*Exod. 1.
*Exod. 13.
*Exod. 13.
† Greeke τροφοφορ[illegible] perhaps fo[illegible] τροφοφορ[illegible] as a nurse bearerh or feedeth her childe. De[illegible] 1.31. 2.m[illegible] 7,27. according to the Sept. and Chrysost.
*Iosh. 14.
*Iudg. 3.
* 1. Sam.
*1 Sa. 16.
*Psal. 89.
*Esay 11.
*Matth 3.
*Iohn 1.

27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, and their Rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voyces of the Prophets which are read every Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

Mat. 27.22. 28 * And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slaine.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

Mat. 28.6. 30 * But God raised him from the dead:

31 And he was seene many dayes of them which came vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made vnto the Fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their children, in that he hath raised vp Iesus againe, as it is also written in the * second Psalme: Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee.

Psal. 2.7. Heb. 1.5. 34 And as concerning that hee raised him vp from the dead, now no more to returne to corruption, he said on this wise, * I will giue you the sure † mercies of Dauid.

Psal. 55.3. 35 Wherefore he saith also in another Psalme, * Thou shalt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

36 For Dauid after he had serued his ‖ owne generation by the will of God, * fell on sleepe, and was laid vnto his fathers, and saw corruption:

37 But hee whom God raised againe, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Bee it knowen vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

39 And by him all that beleeue, are iustified from all things, from which yee could not be iustified by the Law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come vpon you which is spoken of * in the Prophets,

41 Behold, yee despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which you shall in no wise beleeue, though a man declare it vnto you.

42 And when the Iewes were gone out of the Synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these wordes might be preached to them ‖ the next Sabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken vp, many of the Iewes and religious Proselytes followed

Paul

Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the multitudes, they were filled with enuie, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting, and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first haue beene spoken to you: but seeing yee put it from you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, wee turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, * I haue set thee to bee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for saluation vnto the ends of the earth. *Isai. 49.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleeued.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throwout all the region.

50 But the Iewes stirred vp the deuout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and rayled persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51 * But they shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium. *Mat. 10.

52 And the Disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 7 Paul healing a creeple, they are reputed gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They passe through diuers Churches, 26 and returne to Antioch.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes, and also of the Greekes, beleeued.

2 But the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp the Gentiles, and made their minds euill affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the worde of his grace; and granted signes and wonders to bee done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was diuided: and part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.

5 And

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to vse them despitefully, and to stone them;

6 They were ware of it, and fledde vnto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region that lieth round about.

7 And there they preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ And there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a creeple from his mothers wombe, who neuer had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Sayd with a lowde voyce, Stand vpright on thy feete: and he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter, and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then the Priest of Iupiter, which was before their citie, brought oxen, and garlands vnto the gates, and would haue done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why doe ye these things? Wee also are men of like passions with you, and preach vnto you, that yee should turne from these vanities, vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

16 * Who in times past, suffered all nations to walke in their owne wayes.

17 Neuertheless, hee left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he did good, and gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with foode and gladnesse.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Iewes from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and hauing stoned Paul, drew him out of the citie, supposing he had beene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, hee rose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that citie,

en.1.1.
l.146.5.
el.14.7.
ul.81.13.
Cor.11.

citie, and had taught many, they returned againe to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the soules of the disciples, and exhorting them to cõtinue in the faith, & that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders in euery Church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they beleeued.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went downe into Attalia.

26 And thence sayled to Antioch, from whence they had beene commended to the grace of God, for the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Dissension about Circumcision. 6 The Apostles consult about it. 22 Their determination. 36 Paul and Barnabas contend, and part asunder.

AND certaine men which came downe from Iudea, taught the brethren, and said, * Except yee bee circumcised after the maner of Moses, ye cannot be saued. *Galat. 5.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed thorow Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles, and they caused great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles, and Elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there arose vp certaine of the sect of the Pharisees which beleeued, saying, That it was needefull to circumcise them, and to command them to keepe the Law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles and Elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And

7 And when there had beene much disputing, Peter
Ma. 10.20 rose vp, and said vnto them, *Men and brethren, ye know
Ma. 11.13. how that a good while agoe, God made choise among
vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word
of the Gospel, and beleeue.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them
witnesse, giuing them the holy Ghost, euen as hee did
vnto vs,

Ma. 10.43. 9 *And put no difference betweene vs and them, pu-
Cor. 1.2. rifying their hearts by faith.

Mat. 23.4. 10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, *to put a yoke
vpon the necke of the disciples, which neither our fathers
nor we were able to beare?

11 But we beleeue that through the grace of the Lord
Iesus Christ, we shall be saued euen as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gaue
audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what mira-
cles and wonders God had wrought among the Gen-
tiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, Iames an-
swered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did
visite the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his
Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the Prophets, as it
is written,

Amos 9.11 16 *After this I will returne, and will build againe
the Tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe: and I
will build againe the ruines thereof, and I will set it vp:

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the
Lord, and all the Gentiles, vpon whom my Name is cal-
led, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Knowen vnto God are all his workes from the be-
ginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that wee trouble not
them which from among the Gentiles are turned to
God:

20 But that we write vnto them that they abstaine
from pollutions of idoles, and from fornication, and from
things strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie, them
that preach him, being read in the Synagogues euery
Sabbath day.

22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the
whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne com-
pany to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas: namely,
Iudas,

Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The Apostles, and Elders, and brethren, send greeting vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words, subuerting your soules, saying, Ye must be circumcised, & keepe the Law, to whom we gaue no such commandement:

25 It seemed good vnto vs, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue hazarded their liues for the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 Wee haue sent therefore Judas, and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay vpon you no greater burden then these necessary things;

29 That ye abstaine from meats offered to idoles, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if you keepe your selues, yee shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they reioyced for the || consolation.

|| Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being Prophets also themselues, exhorted the brethren with many wordes, and confirmed them:

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let goe in peace from the brethren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs goe againe and visite our brethren, in euery city where we haue preached the word of the Lord, and see how they doe.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them who

who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not
with them to the worke.
39 And the contention was so sharpe betweene them,
that they departed asunder one from the other, and so
Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus.
40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being recom-
mended by the brethren vnto the grace of God.
41 And hee went thorow Syria and Cilicia, confir-
ming the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie, 14 conuerteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of diuination. 19 He and Silas are whipped and imprisoned, 37 and deliuered.

2.16.21 THen came hee to Derbe, and Lystra: and behold, a
certaine disciple was there, * named Timotheus, the
sonne of a certaine woman, which was a Iewesse, and be-
leeued: but his father was a Greeke:
2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that
were at Lystra and Iconium.
3 Him would Paul haue to goe forth with him, and
tooke, and circumcised him, because of the Iewes which
were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his father
was a Greeke.
4 And as they went thorow the cities, they deliuered
15.28 them the decrees for to keepe, * that were ordained of the
Apostles and Elders which were at Hierusalem.
5 And so were the Churches established in the faith,
and increased in number daily.
6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia,
and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy
Ghost, to preach the word in Asia,
7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to goe
into Bythinia: but the Spirit suffered them not.
8 And they passing by Mysia, came downe to Troas.
9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There
stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come
ouer into Macedonia, and helpe vs.
10 And after hee had seene the vision, immediatly wee
endeauoured to goe into Macedonia, assuredly gathering,
that the Lord had called vs for to preach the Gospel vnto
them.
11 Therefore loosing from Troas, wee came with a
straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Ne-
apolis:
the first. 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is || the chiefe
citie

citie of that part of Macedonia, and a Colonie: and wee were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath we went out of the citie by a riuer side, where prayer was wont to bee made, and wee sate downe, and spake vnto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the things that were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized and her houshold, shee besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained vs.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as wee went to prayer, a certaine damsell possessed with a spirit of || diuination, met vs: which brought her masters much gaine by south-saying.

|| Or, of Python.

17 The same followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto vs the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gaines was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the || Market place, vnto the Rulers,

|| Or, court.

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, saying, These men being Iewes, doe exceedingly trouble our citie,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose vp together against them, and the Magistrates rent off their clothes, * and commanded to beat them.

* 2. Cor. 11. 25. 1. Thes. 2. 2.

23 And when they had laid many stripes vpon them, they cast them into prison, charging the Iaylour to keepe them safely,

24 Who hauing receiued such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stockes.

25 ¶ And at midnight, Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediatly

mediately all the doores were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the Keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleepe, and seeing the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing that the prisoners had beene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme, for we are all heere.

29 Then hee called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they said, Beleeue on the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thy house.

32 And they spake vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he tooke them the same houre of the nighe, and washed their stripes, and was baptized, he and all his straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, hee set meat before them and reioyced, beleeuing in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the Magistrates sent the Sergeants saying, Let those men goe.

36 And the Keeper of the prison tolde this saying to Paul, The Magistrates haue sent to let you goe: Now therefore depart, and goe in peace.

37 But Paul said vnto them, They haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, being Romanes, and haue cast vs into prison, and now doe they thrust vs out priuily? Nay verely, but let them come themselues, and fetch vs out.

38 And the Sergeants told these words vnto the Magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

Ma.16.14. 40 And they went out of the prison, * and entred into the house of Lydia, and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica. 10 At Berea. 15 He disputeth and preacheth at Athens. 34 Many are conuerted.

NOw when they had passed thorow Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of the Scriptures,

3 Opening and alleadging, that Christ must needes haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach vnto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeued, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the deuout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine lewd fellowes of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the citie on an vproare, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certaine brethren vnto the Rulers of the citie, crying, These that haue turned the world vpside downe, are come hither also,

7 Whom Jason hath receiued: and these all doe contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the Rulers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken securitie of Jason, and of the other, they let them goe.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who comming thither, went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they receiued the word with all readines of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued: also of honourable women which were Greekes, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred vp the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to goe as it were to the Sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him vnto Athens, and receiuing a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speede, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens,

his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city || wholly giuen to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoikes encountred him: and some said, What will this † babler say? Other some, Hee seemeth to bee a setter forth of strange gods: because hee preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they tooke him, and brought him vnto || Areopagus, saying, May wee know what this new doctrine whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things to our eares: wee would know therefore what these things meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to heare some new thing.

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of || Mars hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your || deuotions, I found an Altar with this inscription, To the Vnknowen God. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I vnto you.

24 * God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that hee is Lord of heauen and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens handes, * as though he needed any thing, seeing he giueth to all, life and breath, and all things,

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if happly they might feele after him, and finde him, though hee bee not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him wee liue, and moue, and haue our being, as certaine also of your owne Poets haue said: For we are also his off-spring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God, * we ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto gold or siluer, or stone grauen by art, and mans deuice.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but

Or, full of idoles.

Gr. base sort.

Or, Mars hill. It was the highest court in Athens.

Or, court of the Areopagites.

Or, gods that you worship, 1. Thes. 2. 4

Cha. 7. 48.

Psal. 50. 8.

Esay 40. 18

but now commandeth all men euery where to repent.
31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which hee will iudge the world in righteousnes, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he || hath giuen assurance vnto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. || Or, offer faith.
32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, Wee will heare thee againe of this matter.
33 So Paul departed from among them.
34 Howbeit, certaine men claue vnto him, and beleeued: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul labouring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision, 12 accused before the Deputy but dismissed. 24 Of Apollos.

AFter these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,
2 And found a certaine Iew named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and came vnto them. *Rom. 1
3 And because hee was of the same craft, hee abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers.)
4 And hee reasoned in the Synagogue euery Sabbath, and perswaded the Iewes, and the Greekes.
5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Iewes, that Iesus was Christ.
6 And when they opposed themselues, and blasphemed, * hee shooke his raiment and said vnto them, Your bloud bee vpon your owne heads, I am cleane: from henceforth I will goe vnto the Gentiles. *Mat. 10.
7 ¶ And hee departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, one that worshipped God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.
8 * And Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, beleeued, and were baptized. *1. Cor. 1.
9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speake, and hold not thy peace:
10 For I am with thee: and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

eeke.
here.

11 And he †continued there a yeere and sixe moneths, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia, the Iewes made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the Iudgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswaded men to worship God contrary to the Law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O yee Iewes, reason would that I should beare with yeu.

15 But if it be a question of words, and names, and of your Law, looke yee to it: for I will be no Iudge of such matters.

16 And he drane them from the Iudgement seat.

17 Then all the Greekes tooke Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the Iudgement seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then tooke his leaue of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: hauing shorne his head in Cenchrea: for hee had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but hee himselfe entred into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the Iewes.

20 When they desired him to tary longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all meanes keepe this Feast that commeth in Hierusalem; but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus.

Cor. 4. 19
4. 15.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone vp, and saluted the Church, he went downe to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went ouer all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia, in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ * And a certaine Iew, named Apolles, borne at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

Cor. 1. 12

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being feruent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptisme of Iohn.

26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him

him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receiue him, who when he was come, helped them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For he mightily conuinced the Iewes, and that publikely, shewing by the Scriptures, that Iesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost giuen by Pauls hands.

AND it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul hauing passed thorow the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus, and finding certaine disciples,

2 He said vnto them, haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleeued? and they said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what then were yee baptized? and they said, Vnto Iohns Baptisme.

4 *Then said Paul, Iohn verely baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleeue on him that should come after him, that is, on Christ Iesus. *Mat.3.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands vpon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 And he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the kingdome of God.

9 But when diuers were hardened and beleeued not, but spake euill of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing dayly in the Schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Greekes.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke, handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcists, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill spi-

rits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua a Iew, and chiefe of the Priests, which did so.

15 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Iesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, leapt on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes & Greekes also dwelling at Ephesus, and feare fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeued came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which vsed curious artes, brought their bookes together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of siluer.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and preuailed

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when hee had passed throw Macedonia and Achaia, to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue beene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but hee himselfe stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stirre about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius, a siluer smith, which made siluer shrines for Diana, brought no small gaine vnto the craftesmen:

25 Whom hee called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, yee know that by this craft we haue our wealth.

26 Moreouer, yee see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that, not onely this our craft is in danger to bee set at nought: but also that the Temple of the great godnesse Diana should bee despised, and her magnificence should bee destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And

29 And the whole citie was filled with confusion, and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in trauaile, they rushed with one accord into the Theatre.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certaine of the chiefe of Asia which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not aduenture himselfe into the Theatre.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would haue made his defence vnto the people.

34 But when they knew that hee was a Iew, all with one voyce about the space of two houres, cryed out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the Towne-clerke had appeased the people, he sayd, Yee men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the image which fell downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot bee spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For yee haue brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of Churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftesmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man, ‖ the Law is open, and there are deputies, let them impleade one another.

39 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shalbe determined in a ‖ lawfull assembly.

40 For wee are in danger to bee called in question for this dayes vproare, there being no cause whereby we may giue an account of this concourse.

41 And when hee had thus spoken, hee dismissed the assembly.

† Greeke, Temple keeper.

‖ Or, the Court dayes are kept.

‖ Or, ordinary.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 Hee celebrateth the Lords Supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus falling downe dead, 16 is raised to life. 17. and 28 At Miletum he committeth the flocke to the Elders, 38 and departeth.

AND after the vproare was ceased, Paul called vnto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone ouer those parts, and had giuen them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Iewes laid waite for him, as hee was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne thorow Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for vs at Troas:

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And vpon the first day of the weeke, when the disciples came together * to break bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speach vntill midnight.

*p.2.45

8 And there were many lights in the vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe, and as Paul was long preaching, hee sunke downe with sleepe, and fell downe from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him, and embracing him, said; Trouble not your selues, for his life is in him.

11 When hee therefore was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, euen till breake of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the yong man aliue, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed vnto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himselfe to goe afoote.

14 And when he met with vs at Assos, wee tooke him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And wee sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: and the next day wee came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted,

if

like were possible for him, to bee at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 And when they were come to him, hee sayd vnto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue beene with you at all seasons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all humility of minde, and with many teares and temptations, which befell mee by the lying in waite of the Iewes:

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught you publikely, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Iewes, and also to the Greekes, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall mee there:

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying that bonds and afflictions ‖ abide me.

‖ Or, waite for mee.

24 But none of these things meoue mee, neither count I my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I might finish my course with ioy, and the ministry which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue not shunned to declare vnto you all the counsell of God.

28 ¶ Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy Ghost hath made you ouer-seers, to feede the Church of God, which hee hath purchased with his owne blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grieuous woolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men arise, speaking peuerse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three yeeres, I ceased not to warne euery one night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and

to

to the word of his grace. which is able to build you vp, and to giue you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, or gold, or apparell.

Cor. 4.12 34 Yea, you your selues know, * that these hands
hes. 2.9. haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that
hess. 3.8. were with mee.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring, yee ought to support the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus, how hee says, It is more blessed to giue, then to receiue.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all,

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the wordes which hee spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Paul will not bee dissuaded from going to Hierusalem. 9 Philips daughters Prophetesses. 17 Paul at Hierusalem, 27 is apprehended and in great danger, 31 but is rescued by the chiefe captaine.

AND it came to passe, that after wee were gotten from them, and had launched, wee came with a straight course vnto Choos, and the day following vnto Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sayling ouer vnto Phenicea, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to vnlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarieb there seuen dayes: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when wee had accomplished those dayes, wee departed, and went our way, and they all brought vs on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the citie: and we kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when wee had taken our leaue one of another, we tooke ship, and they returned home againe.

7 And when wee had finished our course from Tyre, wee came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company, departed, and came vnto Cesarea, and wee entred into the house of Philip the Euangelist (* which was one of the seuen) and abode with him. *Chap. 6.

9 And the same man had foure daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee tarieb there many dayes, there came downe from Iudea a certaine Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when hee was come vnto vs, hee tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and sayd, Thus sayth the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when wee heard these things, both wee and they of that place, besought him not to goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What meane yee to weepe, and to breake mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 And when hee would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes, wee tooke vp our cariages, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also certaine of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when wee were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and all the Elders were present.

19 And when hee had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and sayd vnto him, Thou seest brother, how many thousands of Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walke after the customes.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needes come together: for they will heare that thou art come.

23 Doe

23 Doe therefore this that wee say to thee: We haue
foure men which haue a vow on them,
24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and be
Num. 6.18. at charges with them, that they may * shaue their heads:
Ap.18.18. and all may know that those things whereof they were
informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy
selfe also walkest orderly, and keepest the Law.
Rom.15.20. 25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeue, * wee
haue written and concluded, that they obserue no such
thing, saue onely that they keepe themselues from things
offered to idoles, and from blood, and from strangled, and
from fornication.
26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day puri-
Num.6.13. fying himselfe with them, entred into the Temple, * to
signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of purification,
vntill that an offering should bee offered for euery one of
them.
27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the
Iewes which were of Asia, when they saw him in the
Temple, stirred vp all the people, and layd hands on
him,
28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man
that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and
the Law, and this place; and farther brought Greekes al-
so into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.
29 (For they had seene before with him in the citie,
Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that
Paul had brought into the Temple.)
30 And all the citie was moued, and the people ran
together, and they tooke Paul, and drew him out of the
Temple: and forthwith the doores were shut.
31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came
vnto the chiefe captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem
was in an vproare,
32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers, and Centu-
rions, and ran downe vnto them, and when they saw
the chiefe captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of
Paul.
33 Then the chiefe captaine came neere, and tooke him,
and commanded him to bee bound with two chaines, and
demanded who he was, and what he had done.
34 And some cryed one thing, some another, among
the multitude: and when he could not know the certai-
nie for the tumult, hee commanded him to be caried into
the castle.
35 And when hee came vnto the staires, so it was
that

that hee was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, away with him.

37 And as Paul was to bee led into the castle, he said vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? who said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 *Art not thou that Egyptian, which before these dayes madest an vproare, and ledest out into the wilderness foure thousand men that were murderers. * Chap 5.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Iew of Tarsus a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no meane citie: and I beseech thee suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made a great silence, hee spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth how hee was conuerted, 17 and called to his Apostleship. 22 Mentioning the Gentiles, the people exclaime on him. 25 Hee escapeth scourging, by the priuiledge of a Romane.

MEn, brethren, and fathers, heare ye my defence which I make now vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that hee spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,)

3 *I am verily a man which am a Iew, borne in Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, yet brought vp in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the Law of the Fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day. *Cha. 21.

4 *And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women, *Chap. 8

5 As also the High Priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the estate of the Elders: from whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, & went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my iourney, and was come nigh vnto Damascus about noone, suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 And I fell vnto the ground, and heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And

8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said vnto me, I am Iesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with mee, saw indeed the light, and were afraid: but they heard not the voyce of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord said vnto mee, Arise, and goe into Damascus, and there it shall bee told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a deuout man according to the Law, hauing a good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto me, and stood, and said vnto mee, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight. And the same houre I looked vp vpon him,

14 And hee said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Iust One, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnes vnto all men, of what thou hast seene and heard.

16 And now, why tarryest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come again to Hierusalem, euen while I prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance;

18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy Testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued on thee.

20 *And when the blood of the Martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting vnto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

Chap. 7. 58.

21 And he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, and then lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fitte that hee should liue.

23 And as they cryed out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre,

24 The

24 The chiefe captaine commanded him to be brought into the Castle, and bade that hee should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cryed so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and vncondemned?

26 When the Centurion heard that hee went and told the chiefe Captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe Captaine came and said vnto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chiefe Captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free borne.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should haue ‖ examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

‖ Or, torture him.

30 On the morrow, because he would haue knowen the certaintie, wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the chiefe Priests and all their Councell to appeare, and brought Paul downe, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, Ananias commandeth to smite him. 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 15 The Iewes lay waite for him. 20 Hee is rescued by the chiefe Captaine, 27 and sent to Felix.

AND Paul earnestly beholding the Councell, sayde, Men and brethren, I haue liued in all good conscience before God vntill this day.

2 And the high Priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then saith Paul vnto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to iudge mee after the Law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the Law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Reuilest thou Gods high Priest?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that he was the high Priest: For it is written, *Thou shalt not speake euill of the Ruler of thy people.

*Exo. 22.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cryed out in the Councell,

hil.3.5. Councell, Men and brethren, * I am a Pharisee, the
ha.24.21. sonne of a Pharisee: * of the hope and resurrection of the dead, am I called in question.

7 And when hee had so said, there arose a dissention, betweene the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was diuided.

Mat.22.23 8 * For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel nor Spirit: but the Pharisees confesse both.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and stroue, saying, We find no euill in this man: but if a spirit, or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissention, the chiefe Captaine fearing lest Paul should haue been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to goe downe and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the Castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheere, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certaine of the Iewes banded together, and bound themselues vnder ‖ a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drinke till they had killed Paul.

‖ *, with an h of execration.*

13 And they were more then fortie which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priests and Elders, and said, Wee haue bound our selues vnder a great curse that we will eat nothing, vntill we haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore yee with the Councell, signifie to the chiefe Captaine, that he bring him downe vnto you to morrow, as though yee would enquire something more perfectly concerning him, and wee, or euer he come neere, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying in wait, he went and entred into the Castle, and tolde Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and said, Bring this yong man vnto the chiefe Captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to tell him.

18 So hee tooke him, and brought him to the chiefe Captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bring this young man vnto thee, who hath something to say vnto thee.

19 Then

19 Then the chiefe Captaine tooke him by the hand, and went with him aside priuately, and asked him, What is it that thou hast to tell me?

20 And hee sayde, the Iewes haue agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring downe Paul to morrow into the Councill, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But doe not thou yeelde vnto them: for there lie in waite for him of them moe then fourty men, which haue bound themselues with an oath, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chiefe captaine then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And hee called vnto him two Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to goe to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and tenne, and spearemen two hundred, at the third houre of the night

24 And prouide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe vnto Felix the Gouernour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most excellent Gouernor Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue beene killed of them: Then came I with an armie and rescued him, hauing vnderstood ý he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowen the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Councill.

29 Whom I perceiued to bee accused of questions of their Law, but to haue nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was tolde mee, how that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I sent straightway to thee: and gaue commandement to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned to the Castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and deliuered the Epistle to the Gouernour, presented Paul also before him

34 And when the Gouernour had read the Letter, he asked of what Prouince he was. And when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, said hee, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Paul accused by Tertullus, 10 answereth for himselfe, 24 preacheth Christ to the Gouernour and his wife. 27 He going out of his office, leaueth Paul in prison.

AND after fiue daies, Ananias the high Priest descended with the Elders, and with a certaine Orator named Tertullus, who informed the Gouernour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enioy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deeds are done vnto this nation by thy prouidence:

3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankefulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not farther tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy clemencie a few words.

5 For we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes.

6 Who also hath gone about to prophane the Temple: whom we tooke, and would haue iudged according to our Law.

7 But the chiefe Captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him away out of our hands:

8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee, by examining of whom thy selfe mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the Gouernour had beckened vnto him to speake, answered; Forasmuch as I know that thou hast beene of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this nation, I doe the more cheerefully answere for my selfe:

11 Because that thou mayest vnderstand, that there are yet but twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither raising vp the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie:

13 Neither can they prooue the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, which they themselues also allow, that there shall bee a resurrection of the dead, both of the iust and vniust.

16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe, to haue alwayes a conscience voide of offence towards God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came to bring almes to my nation, and offerings:

18 *Whereupon certaine Iewes from Asia found mee purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult: * Cha. 21.

19 Who ought to haue beene here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they haue found any euill doing in me, while I stood before the Councill,

21 Except it bee for this one voyce, that I cryed standing among them, *Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day. * Chap. 23

22 And when Felix heard these things, hauing more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chiefe Captaine shall come downe, I will know the vttermost of your matter.

23 And hee commaunded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and to let him haue liberty, and that hee should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come vnto him.

24 And after certaine dayes, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iew, hee sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as hee reasoned of righteousnesse, temperance, and iudgement to come, Felix trembled and answered, Goe thy way for this time, when I haue a conuenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should haue beene giuen him of Paul, that hee might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two yeeres, Portius Festus came into Felix roume: and Felix willing to shew the Iewes a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP XXV.

2 Paul accused before Festus, 8 answereth for himselfe, 12 appealeth to Cesar. 14 Festus openeth the matter to Agrippa. 23 He is brought foorth, 25 and cleared by Festus.

NOw when Festus was come into the prouince, after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to Hierusalem.
2 Then the high Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes informed him against Paul, and besought him,
3 And desired fauour against him, that hee would send for him to Hierusalem, laying waite in the way to kill him.
4 But Festus answered, that Paul should bee kept at Cesarea, and that hee himselfe would depart shortly thither.
5 Let them therefore, said hee, which among you are able, goe downe with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.
6 And when hee had tarried among them || more then ten dayes, hee went downe to Cesarea, and the next day, sitting in the iudgement seate, commanded Paul to bee brought.
7 And when hee was come, the Iewes which came downe from Hierusalem, stood round about, and layd many and grieuous complaints against Paul, which they could not prooue,
8 While hee answered for himselfe, Neither against the Law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor yet against Cesar, haue I offended any thing at all.
9 But Festus willing to doe the Iewes a pleasure, answered Paul and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?
10 Then sayd Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seat, where I ought to bee iudged, to the Iewes haue I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.
11 For if I bee an offender, or haue committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse mee, no man may deliuer me vnto them, I appeale vnto Cesar.
12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the Counsell, answered, hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.
13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice, came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.
14 And when they had beene there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in bonds by Felix:
15 About whom when I was at Hierusalem, the chiefe Priests and the Elders of the Iewes informed mee, desiring to haue Iudgement against him.
16 To whom I answered, It is not the maner of the Romanes

r, as some ies reade, more then nt or ten yes.

Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answere for himselfe concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay, on the morrow I sate on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, & of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because || I doubted of such maner of questions, I asked him whether hee would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to bee reserued vnto the || hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him vnto Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow sayd hee, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pompe, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chiefe captaines, and principall men of the citie, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with vs, yee see this man about whom all the multitude of the Iewes have dealt with mee, both at Hierusalem, and also heere, crying that hee ought not to liue any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that hee himselfe had appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my lord: wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and especially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me vnreasonable, to send a prisoner, & not withall to signifie the crimes layd against him.

|| Or, I was doubtfull how to enquire hereof.

|| Or, iudgement.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 Paul before Agrippa declareth his life, 12 his conuersion and calling. 24 Festus chargeth him to bee mad. 28 Agrippa almost perswaded to be a Christian.

THen Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe,

2 I thinke my selfe happy, King Agrippa, because I shall answere for my selfe this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes:

3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customes and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee to heare me patiently:

4 My maner and life from my youth, which was at the first among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me from the beginning (if they would testifie) that after the most strattest sect of our religion, I liued a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am iudged for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers:

7 Vnto which promise our twelue Tribes instantly seruing God day and night, hope to come: For which hopes sake, King Artppa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verely thought with my selfe, that I ought to doe many things contrary to the Name of Iesus of Nazareth:

hap 8.3 10 *Which thing I also did in Hierusalem, and many of the Saints did I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authority from the chiefe Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue my voyce against them.

11 And I punished them oft in euery Synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them euen vnto strange cities.

hap. 9.1. 12 *Whereupon, as I went to Damascus, with authoritie and commission from the chiefe Priests:

13 At midday O King, I saw in the way a light from heauen, aboue the brightnesse of the Sunne, shining round about me, and them which iourneyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking vnto me, & saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou mee? It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And hee sayd, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand vpon thy feet, for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister

and

and a witnes, both of these things which thou hast seene, and of those things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turne them from darkenesse to light, & from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision:

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turne to God, and doe workes meete for repentance.

21 For these causes the Iewes caught me in the Temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Hauing therefore obtained helpe of God, I continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that hee should bee the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himselfe, Festus said with a lowde voyce, Paul, thou art beside thy selfe, much learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speake forth the words of truth and sobernesse.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake freely: for I am perswaded, that none of these things are hidden from him, for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou, but also all that heare me this day, were both almost and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them,

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue beene set at liberte, if hee had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not beleeued. 14 They are tossed with a tempest, 41 and suffer shipwracke, 22. 34. 44 yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined, that wee should saile into Italy, they deliuered Paul, and certaine other prisoners, vnto one named Iulius, a Centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, wee launched, meaning to saile by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with vs.

3 And the next day wee touched at Sidon: and Iulius courteously entreated Paul, and gaue him liberty to goe vnto his friends to refresh himselfe.

4 And when we had launched from thence, wee sailed vnder Cyprus, because the windes were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed ouer the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Mylia a citie of Lycia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria sayling into Italy, and he put vs therein.

7 And when wee had sayled slowly many dayes, and scarce were come ouer against Gnidus, the winde not suffering vs, wee sayled vnder || Creete, ouer against Salmone,

|| Candy.

8 And hardly passing it, came vnto a place which is called the faire hauens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sayling was now dangerous, because the Fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And sayd vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this voyage will be with || hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading and ship but also of our liues.

|| Iniury.

11 Neuertheleſſe, the Centurion beleeued the master and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the Hauen was not commodious to winter in, the more part aduised to depart thence also, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an hauen of Creete, and lieth toward the Southwest, and Northwest.

13 And when the South winde blew softly, supposing that

that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sayled close by Creete.

14 But not long after, there ‖ arose against it a tempestuous winde called Euroclydon. ‖ Or, bea

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not beare vp into the winde, we let her driue.

16 And running vnder a certaine yland, which is called Clauda, we had much worke to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken vp, they vsed helpes, vnder-girding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quick-sands, strake saile, and so were driuen.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day, they lightened the ship:

19 And the third day we cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither Sunne nor Starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on vs; all hope that we should be saued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the mids of them, and sayd, Sirs, yee should haue hearkened vnto mee, and not haue loosed from Creete, and to haue gained this harme and losse.

22 And now I exhort you to bee of good cheere: for there shall bee no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue,

24 Saying, Feare not Paul, thou must bee brought before Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen thee all them that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs, bee of good cheere: for I beleeue God, that it shall be euen as it was told me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast vpon a certaine Iland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as wee were driuen vp and downe in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neere to some countrey:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found it sixteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest wee should haue fallen vpon rockes, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let downe the boat into the sea, vnder colour as though they would haue cast ancres out of the fore-ship:

31 Paul said to the Centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saued.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was comming on, Paul besought them all to take meate, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye haue tarried, and continued fasting, hauing taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meate, for this is for your health: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when hee had thus spoken, he tooke bread and gaue thankes to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good cheere, and they also tooke some meate.

37 And we were all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheate into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discouered a certaine creeke, with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had ‖taken vp the anchres, they committed themselues vnto the sea, and looſed the rudder bands, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and made toward shore.

‖ *cut the anchres, they thrust them in the sea, &c.*

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground, and the forepart stucke fast, and remained vnmoueable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, least any of them should swimme out, and escape.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commaunded that they which could swimme should cast themselues first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boords, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 The Barbarians kindnes to Paul. 5 The viper on his hand. 11 They depart toward Rome. 17 He declareth the cause of his comming. 24 Some beleeue his preaching, and some doe not, 30 yet he preacheth there two yeeres.

And

AND when they were escaped, then they knew that the Iland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one because of the present raine, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laide them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venemous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselues, No doubt this man is a murtherer, whom though hee hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to liue.

5 And hee shooke off the beast into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit, they looked when he should haue swollen, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harme come to him, they changed their mindes, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chiefe man of the Iland, whose name was Publius, who receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a bloody flixe, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the Iland, came and were healed:

10 Who also honoured vs with many honours, and when wee departed, they laded vs with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths wee departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the Ile, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, wee tarried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the South winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli.

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tary with them seuen dayes: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meet vs as far as Appii-forum, and the three Tauernes: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and tooke courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the captaine of the guards but Paul

was

was suffered to dwell by himselfe, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together. And when they were come together, hee sayd vnto them, Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or customes of our fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake against it, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you to see you, and to speake with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chaine.

21 And they sayd vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee.

22 But we desire to heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, wee know that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom hee expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Iesus, both out of the Law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning till euening.

24 And some beleeued the things which were spoken, and some beleeued not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselues, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our fathers,

i.6.9. 26 Saying, "Goe vnto this people, and say, Hearing
.13.14. ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall
ke 4.12. see, and not perceiue.

8.4. 27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and
12.40. their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they
11.8. closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and vnderstand with their heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that the saluation of God is sent vnto the Gentiles, and that they will heare it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeeres in his owne hired house, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the Kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO the Romanes.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls calling. 9 His desire to come to them. 16 What his Gospel is. 18 Gods anger against all sinne. 21 The Gentiles sinnes.

PAul a seruant of Iesus Christ, called to be an Apostle, * separated vnto the Gospel of God. * Actes 1

2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures.)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seede of Dauid according to the flesh,

4 And † declared to be the Son of God, with power, according to the Spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead. † Gr. determined.

5 By whom wee haue receiued grace and Apostleship ‖ for obedience to § faith among all nations for his Name, ‖ Or, to the obedience of faith.

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloued of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First, I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serue ‖ with my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne, that without ceasing I make mention of you, alwayes in my prayers, ‖ Or, in my spirit.

10 Making request, (if by any meanes now at length I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will of God) to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart vnto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established,

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ‖ with you by the mutuall faith both of you and me. ‖ Or, in

13 Now I would not haue you ignorant brethren, that often

oftentimes I purposed to come vnto you, but was let
in you. hitherto) that I might haue some fruit || among you also,
euen as among other Gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Greekes, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the vnwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto Saluation, to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iew first, and also to the Greeke.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God reuealed
uc. 2. 4. from faith to faith, as it is written, * The iust shall liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen against all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of men, who hold the trueth in vnrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may be knowen of God is ma-
y, to them. nifest || in them, for God hath shewed it vnto them.

20 For the inuisible things of him from the creation of the world, are clearely seene, being vnderstood by the things that are made, euen his eternall power and God-
, that they head, || so that they are without excuse:
y bee.

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened:

22 Professing themselues to bee wise, they became
al. 106. fooles:

23 And changed the glory of the vncorruptible * God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and foure footed beasts, and creeping things:

24 Wherefore God also gaue them vp to vncleannesse, through the lusts of their owne hearts, to dishonour their owne bodies betweene themselues:

25 Who changed the trueth of God into a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature more then the Creator, who is blessed for euer. Amen.

26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men, leaning the naturall vse of the woman, burned in their lust one towards another, men with men working that which is vnseemely, and receiuing in themselues that recompence of their errour
y, to ac- which was meet.
wledge.

28 And euen as they did not like || to retaine God

in

in their knowledge, God gaue them ouer to ‖ a reprobate minde, to doe those things which are not conuenient:

29 Being filled with all vnrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, couetousnesse, malicioufnes, full of enuie, murder, debate, deceit, malignitie, whisperers,

30 Backebiters, haters of God, despitefull, proude, boasters, inuenters of euill things, disobedient to parents;

31 Without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without ‖ naturall affection, implacable, vnmercifull;

32 Who knowing the iudgement of God, (that they which commit such things, are worthy of death) not onely doe the same, but ‖ haue pleasure in them that doe them.

‖ Or, a mind voyde of iudgement.

‖ Or, vnsociable.

‖ Or, consent with them.

CHAP. II.

1 They that condemne sinne in others, and yet sinne, are inexcusable. 9 whether they be Iewes or Gentiles.

THerefore, thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that iudgest: for wherein thou iudgest another, thou condemnest thy selfe, for thou that iudgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that iudgest them which doe such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnesse, and impenitent heart, *treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath, and reuelation of the righteous iudgement of God:

6 *Who will render to euery man according to his deedes:

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well doing seeke for glory, & honour, and immortalitie, eternall life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and doe not obey the trueth, but obey vnrighteousnesse, indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation, and anguish vpon euery soule of man that doeth euill, of the Iew first, and also of the † Gentile.

10 But glory, honour and peace to euery man that worketh good, to the Iew first, and also to the † Gentile.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

*Iam. 5. 3.

*Psal. 62. 12. mat. 16. 27. reue. 22. 12.

† Greeke Greeke.

† Greeke Greeke.

12 For

12 For as many as haue sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as haue sinned in the law, shall be iudged by the law.

13 For not the hearers of the law are iust before God, but the doers of the law shall be iustified;

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, doe by nature the things contained in the Law, these hauing not the Law, are a Law vnto themselues,

15 Which shew the worke of the Law written in their hearts, their || conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts || the meane while accusing or else excusing one another:

16 In the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

17 Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Law, and makest thy boast of God:

18 And knowest his will, and || approuest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the Law,

19 And art confident that thou thy selfe art a guide of the blind, a light to them which are in darknesse:

20 An instructour of the foolish, a teacher of babes: which hast the forme of knowledge and of the trueth in the Law:

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest a man should not steale, doest thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest, A man should not commit adultery, doest thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idoles, doest thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, thorow breaking the Law, dishonourest thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is * written:

25 For Circumcision verely profiteth if thou keepe the Law, but if thou be a breaker of the Law, thy Circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe the righteousnesse of the Law, shall not his vncircumcision be counted for Circumcision?

27 And shall not vncircumcision, which is by nature, if it fulfill the Law, iudge thee, who by the letter and Circumcision, doest transgresse the Law?

28 For hee is not a Iewe, which is one outwardly, neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Iew which is one inwardly, and Circumcision

r, the conscience wit-sing with m.

r, betweene mselues.

r, tryest the ngs that ter.

ay 52.5. .36.20.

circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Iewes prerogatiue, 9 Yet the Law conuinceth them also of sinne. 20 None iustified by the Law, 28 but all by faith.

WHat aduantage then hath the Iewe? or what profit is there of Circumcision?

2 Much euery way: chiefely because that vnto them were committed the Oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeue? shall their vnbelieke make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God bee true, but euery man a lyar, as it is written, * That thou mightest bee iustified in thy sayings, and mightest ouercome when thou art iudged. * Psal. 51.

5 But if our vnrighteousnes commend the righteousnesse of God, what shall we say? is God vnrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speake as a man.)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God iudge the world?

7 For if the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glory: why yet am I also iudged as a sinner?

8 And not rather as we bee slanderously reported, and as some affirme that we say, Let vs doe euill, that good may come: whose damnation is iust.

9 What then? are wee better then they? No, in no wise: for wee haue before † proued both Iewes and Gentiles, that they are all vnder sinne. † Gr. charged

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none that seeketh after God,

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become vnprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they haue vsed deceit, the poyson of aspes is vnder their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse:

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace haue they not knowen.

18 There is no feare of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know, that what things soeuer the Law

faith, it saith to them who are vnder the Law: that every mouth may bee stopped, and all the world may become || guilty before God.

Or, subiect to the iudgement of God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the Law, there shall no flesh bee iustified in his sight: for by the Law is the knowledge of sinne.

21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets,

22 Euen the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Iesus Christ vnto all, and vpon all them that beleeue: for there is no difference:

23 For all haue sinned, and come short of the glory of God,

24 Being iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Iesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath set || forth to bee a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the || remission of sinnes that are past, through the forbearance of God.

Or, foreordained.

Or, passing over.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that he might be iust, and the iustifier of him which beleeueth in Iesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of workes? Nay: but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith, without the deeds of the Law.

29 Is hee the God of the Iewes onely? is hee not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God that shall iustifie the circumcision by faith, and vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe wee then make voyde the Law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Law.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Abrahams faith imputed for righteousnesse, 10 before hee was circumcised. 16 Abraham the father of all beleeuers. 24 Our faith shall be also imputed for righteousnesse.

WHat shall wee say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh hath found?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, hee hath whereof to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted vnto him for righteousnesse.

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of Grace, but of debt.

5 But

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth on him that iustifieth the vngodly: his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Euen as Dauid also describeth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without workes:

7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sinnes are couered.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sinne.

9 Commeth this blessednesse then vpon the Circumcision onely, or vpon the vncircumcision also? for wee say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in Circumcision, or in vncircumcision? not in Circumcision, but in vncircumcision.

11 And he receiued the signe of Circumcision, a seale of the righteousnesse of the faith, which he had yet being vncircumcised: that hee might be the father of all them that beleeue, though they be not Circumcised; that righteousnesse might be imputed to them also.

12 And the father of Circumcision, to them who are not of the Circumcision onely, but also walke in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which hee had being yet vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be ꝑ heire of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seede through the Law, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Law be heires, faith is made voyde, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the Law worketh wrath: for where no Law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace, to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that onely which is of the Law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, * I haue made thee a father of many nations) ‖ before him whom he beleeued, euen God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were.

18 Who against hope, beleeued in hope, that hee might become the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken, * So shall thy seed be.

19 And being not weake in faith, hee considered not his owne body now dead, when he was about an hundred yeres old, neither yet the deadnesse of Saras wombe.

* Gen. 1
‖ *Or, like to him.*

*Gen. 15.

20 Yee staggered not at the promise of God through vnbelieke: but was strong in faith, giuing glory to God:
21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was also able to performe.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.
23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed vnto him:
24 But for vs also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we beleeue on him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead,
25 Who was deliuered for our offences, and was raised againe for our iustification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God. 12 Sinne and death came by Adam, 17 righteousnesse and life by Christ.

THerefore being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God, through our Lord Iesus Christ.
2 By whom also wee haue access by faith, into this grace wherein we stand, and reioyce in hope of the glorie of God.
3 And not onely so, but wee glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:
4 And patience, experience: and experience, hope:
5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs.
6 For when we were yet without strength, || in due time Christ died for the vngodly.
7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradiuenture for a good man, some would euen dare to die.
8 But God commendeth his loue towards vs, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.
9 Much more then being now iustified by his blood, we shall be saued from wrath through him.
10 For if when we were enemies, wee were reconciled to God, by the death of his Sonne: much more being reconciled, we shall be saued by his life.
11 And not onele so, but we also ioy in God, through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom wee haue now receiued the atonement.
12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne: and so death passed vpon all men, || for that all haue sinned.

, accor- to the

in whom.

13 For

13 For vntill the Law sinne was in the world: but sinne is not imputed when there is no Law.

14 Neuertheleſſe, death reigned from Adam to Moſes, euen ouer them that had not ſinned after the ſimilitude of Adams tranſgreſſion, who is the figure of him that was to come:

15 But not as the offence, ſo is alſo the free gift: for if through the offence of one, many be dead: much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Jeſus Chriſt, hath abounded vnto many.

16 And not as it was by one that ſinned, ſo is the gift: for the iudgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences vnto iuſtification.

17 For if || by one mans offence, death raigned by one, much more they which receiue abundance of grace and of the gift of righteouſneſſe, ſhall reigne in life by one, Jeſus Chriſt.

|| Or, by o offence.

18 Therefore as || by the offence of one, iudgement came vpon all men to condemnation: euen ſo by the ||righteouſneſſe of one, the free gift came vpon all men vnto iuſtification of life.

|| Or, by o offence.
|| Or, by o righteouſ

19 For as by one mans diſobedience many were made ſinners: ſo by the obedience of one, ſhall many bee made righteous.

20 Moreouer, the Law entred, that the offence might abound: but where ſinne abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as ſinne hath reigned vnto death; euen ſo might grace reigne through righteouſneſſe vnto eternall life, by Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not liue in ſinne, 12 nor let ſinne reigne in vs. 23 Death is the wages of ſinne.

WHat ſhall we ſay then? ſhall we continue in ſinne, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how ſhall wee that are dead to ſinne, liue any longer therein?

3 Know ye not, that ſo many of vs as || were baptized into Jeſus Chriſt, were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptiſme into death, that like as Chriſt was rayſed vp from the dead by the glory of the Father: euen ſo wee alſo ſhould walke in newneſſe of life.

5 For if wee haue beene planted together in the likeneſſe of his death: wee ſhall bee alſo in the likeneſſe of his reſurrection.

6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is † freed from sinne.

8 Now if wee bee dead with Christ, wee beleeue that wee shall also liue with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being rayseed from the dead dyeth no more, death hath no more dominion ouer him:

10 For in that he dyed, he dyed vnto sinne once: but in that he liueth, he liueth vnto God.

11 Likewise reckon yee also your selues to bee dead indeede vnto sinne: but aliue vnto God, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neyther yeelde yee your members as † instruments of vnrighteousnesse vnto sinne: but yeelde your selues vnto God, as those that are aliue from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousnesse vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you, for yee are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shall we sinne, because we are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 Know yee not, that to whom yee yeeld your selues seruants to obey, his seruants yee are to whom yee obey; whether of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnesse?

17 But God bee thanked, that ye were the seruants of sinne: but yee haue obeyed from the heart that forme of doctrine † which was deliuered you.

18 Being then made free from sinne, yee became the seruants of righteousnesse.

19 I speake after the manner of men, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as ye haue yeelded your members seruants to vncleannesse and to iniquity, vnto iniquity: euen so now yeelde your members seruants to righteousnesse, vnto holinesse.

20 For when yee were the seruants of sinne, yee were free † from righteousnesse.

21 What fruit had yee then in those things, whereof yee are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sinne, and become seruants to God, yee haue your fruit vnto holinesse, and the end euerlasting life.

23 For

. iustified

. armes
eapons.

. whereto
re deli-
d.

. to righ-
nesse.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 No Law hath power ouer a man longer then hee liueth.
7 The Law is not sinne, 12 but holy, iust, and good.

KNow yee not, brethren, (for I speake to them that know the Law) how that the Law hath dominion ouer a man, as long as he liueth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the Law to her husband so long as hee liueth: but if the husband bee dead, shee is loosed from the Law of the husband.

3 So then, if while her husband liueth, she be married to another man, shee shall bee called an adulteresse: but if her husband bee dead, shee is free from that Law, so that shee is no adulteresse, though shee bee married to another man.

4 Wherefore, my brethren, yee also are become dead to the Law by the body of Christ, that yee should be married to another, euen to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when wee were in the flesh, the † motions of sinnes which were by the Law, did worke in our members, to bring forth fruit vnto death. † Gr. passi

6 But now wee are deliuered from the Law, ‖ that being dead wherein we were held, that wee should serue in newnesse of spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter. ‖ Or, bei dead to th

7 What shall wee say then? is the Law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I had not knowen sinne, but by the Law: for I had not knowen ‖ lust, except the Law had sayd, Thou shalt not couet. ‖ Or, con piscence.

8 But sinne taking occasion by the commandement, wrought in me all maner of concupiscence. For without the Law sinne was dead.

9 For I was aliue without the Law once, but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued, and I died.

10 And the commandement which was ordained to life, I found to be vnto death.

12 For sinne taking occasion by the commandement, deceiued me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the Law is holy, and the Commandement holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto me? God forbid. But sinne, that it might appeare sinne, working death in mee by that which is good: that sinne by the Commandement might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the Law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold vnder sinne.

15 For that which I doe, I † allow not: for what I would, that doe I not, but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If then I doe that which I would not, I consent vnto the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that doe it: but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to will, is present with me: but how to performe that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I doe not, but the euill which I would not that I doe.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a Law, that when I would doe good, euill is present with me.

22 For I delight in the Law of God, after the inward man:

23 But I see another Law in my members, warring against the Law of my minde, and bringing me into captiuitie to the Law of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer mee from || the body of this death?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the minde I my selfe serue the Law of God: but with the flesh the law of sinne.

† Gr. know.

|| Gr. this body of death.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Who are free from condemnation. 5. 13 What harme commeth of the flesh, 6. 14 and what good of the spirit, 17 and what of being Gods childe.

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

2 For the Law of the spirit of life in Christ Iesus, hath made me free from the law of sinne and death.

3 For what the Law could not doe, in that it was weake through the flesh, God sending his owne Sonne in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and || for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh:

4 That the righteousnesse of the Law might be fulfilled in vs, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, doe mind the things of the flesh: but they that are after the spirit, the things of the spirit.

|| Gr. by a sacrifice for

6 For † to bee carnally minded, is death: but † to bee spiritually minded, is life and peace.

7 Because † the carnall mind is enmity against God: for it is not subiect to the Law of God, neither indeede can bee.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so bee that the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man haue not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ bee in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the spirit is life, because of righteousnesse.

11 But if the spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: he that rayseb vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies || by his spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the flesh to liue after the flesh.

13 For if yee liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if yee through the spirit doe mortifie the deedes of the body, yee shall liue.

14 For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For yee haue not receiued the spirit of bondage againe to feare: but yee haue receiued the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The spirit it selfe beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires, heires of God, and ioynt heires with Christ: if so bee that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to bee compared with the glory which shall be reuealed in vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature, waiteth for the manifestation of the sonnes of God.

20 For the creature was made subiect to vanitie, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subiected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it selfe also shall bee deliuered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For wee know that || the whole creation groaneth, and trauaileth in paine together vntill now.

23 And not onely they, but our selues also which haue the first fruits of the spirit, euen wee our selues groane within

† Gr. the minding of the flesh.

† Gr. the minding of the spirit.

† Gr. the minding of the flesh.

|| Or, because of his spirit.

|| Or, euery creature.

within our selues, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the
uk.21.28. * redemption of our body.
24 For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doeth hee yet hope for?
25 But if we hope for that wee see not, then doe wee with patience waite for it.
26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what wee should pray for as we ought: but the spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs, with groanings which cannot be vttered.
27 And hee that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what
r, that. is the minde of the spirit, ¶ because he maketh intercession for the Saints, according to the will of God.
28 And wee know that all things worke together for good to them that loue God, to them who are the called, according to his purpose.
29 For whom hee did foreknow, hee also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Sonne, that hee might be the first borne among many brethren.
30 Moreouer, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom hee called, them also he iustified: and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.
31 What shall wee then say to these things? If God be for vs, who can be against vs?
32 Hee that spared not his owne Sonne, but deliuered him vp for vs all: how shall hee not with him also freely giue vs all things?
33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that iustifieth:
34 Who is hee that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is euen at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for vs.
35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword?
44.22 36 (As it is written, * For thy sake wee are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)
37 Nay, in all these things wee are more then conquerours, through him that loued vs.
38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,
39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall bee able to separate vs from the loue of God which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls sorrow for the Iewes. 7 All Abrahams seede were not children of the promise. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and reiecting of the Iewes.

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my selfe were ‖ accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsemen according to ye flesh: ‖Or, separated.

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the ‖ couenants, and the giuing of the Law, and the seruice of God, and the promises: ‖Or, testaments.

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is ouer all, God blessed for euer, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seede of Abraham are they all children: but * in Isaac shall thy seede be called. *Gen.21.

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh: these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seede.

9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne, *Gen.18.

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had conceiued by one, euen by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet borne, neither hauing done any good or euill, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of workes, but of him that calleth)

12 It was said vnto her, The * ‖ elder shall serue the ‖ younger. *Gen.25. ‖Or, greater. ‖Or, lesser.

13 As it is written, * Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated. * Malac.1.

14 What shall we say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.

15 For hee saith to Moses, * I will haue mercy on whom I will haue mercy, and I will haue compassion on whom I will haue compassion. *Exo.33.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, * Euen for the same purpose haue I rayled thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth. *Exod.9.

18 There-

within our selues, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the
uk.21.28. * redemption of our body.

24 For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doeth hee yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that wee see not, then doe wee with patience waite for it.

26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what wee should pray for as we ought: but the spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs, with groanings which cannot be vttered.

27 And hee that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what
r, that. is the minde of the spirit, ¶ because he maketh intercession for the Saints, according to the will of God.

28 And wee know that all things worke together for good to them that loue God, to them who are the called, according to his purpose.

29 For whom hee did foreknow, hee also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Sonne, that hee might be the first borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom hee called, them also he iustified: and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall wee then say to these things? If God be for vs, who can be against vs?

32 Hee that spared not his owne Sonne, but deliuered him vp for vs all: how shall hee not with him also freely giue vs all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that iustifieth:

34 Who is hee that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is euen at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword?

.44.22 36 (As it is written, * For thy sake wee are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay, in all these things wee are more then conquerours, through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall bee able to separate vs from the loue of God which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls sorrow for the Iewes. 7 All Abrahams seede were not children of the promise. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and reiecting of the Iewes.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my selfe were ‖ accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsemen according to ye flesh: ‖ Or, separated.

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the ‖ couenants, and the giuing of the Law, and the seruice of God, and the promises: ‖ Or, testaments.

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is ouer all, God blessed for euer, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seede of Abraham are they all children: but * in Isaac shall thy seede be called. *Gen.21.

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh: these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seede.

9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne, *Gen.18.

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had conceiued by one, euen by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet borne, neither hauing done any good or euill, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of workes, but of him that calleth)

12 It was said vnto her, The * ‖ elder shall serue the ‖ younger. *Gen.25. ‖ Or, great. ‖ Or, lesser.

13 As it is written, * Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated. * Malac.1.

14 What shall we say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.

15 For hee saith to Moses, * I will haue mercy on whom I will haue mercy, and I will haue compassion on whom I will haue compassion. *Exo.33.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, * Euen for the same purpose haue I rayled thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth. *Exod.9.

18 There-

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom hee will haue mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me; Why doeth hee yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay, but O man, who art thou that ‖ replieſt against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, * Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the * potter power ouer the clay, of the same lumpe, to make one vessell vnto honour, and another vnto dishonour?

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowen, endured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath ‖ fitted to destruction:

23 And that he might make knowen the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen vs whom hee hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As hee saith also in Osee. * I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloued, which was not beloued.

26 * And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said vnto them, Yee are not my people, there shall they be called the children of the liuing God.

27 Esaias cryeth also concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the Sea, a remnant shall be saued.

28 For hee will finish the ‖ worke, and cut it short in righteousnesse: because a short worke will the Lord make vpon the earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, * Except the Lord of Sabbath had left vs a seede, we had beene as Sodoma, and beene made like vnto Gomorrha.

30 What shall wee say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousnesse, haue attained to righteousnesse, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith:

31 But Israel which followed after the Law of righteousnesse, hath not attained to the Law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? because they sought it, not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the Law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rocke of offence: and whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be ‖ ashamed.

Or, answeret against, or contest with God.
Esai. 45. 9.
Hiere. 18. 6.
Rom. 15. 7.
Or, made
Ose. 2. 23.
Rom. 2. 10.
Ose. 1. 10.
Esay 10.
Rom. 23.
Or, the account.
Esay 1. 9.
Esay 8. 14.
28. 16.
Rom. 2. 6
confound

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

5 The difference of the righteousnesse of the Law, and that of faith. 11 No beleeuer shall bee confounded, whether Iew or Gentile.

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue a zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their owne righteousnesse, haue not submitted themselues vnto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousnesse vnto euery one that beleeueth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is of the Law, that * the man which doeth those things, shall liue by them. * Leuit. 18. ezek. 20.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise; * Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? That is to bring Christ downe from aboue. gal. 3. 12. *Deut. 30.

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deepe? That is, to bring vp Christ againe from the dead.

8 But what saith it? * The word is nigh thee, euen in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that is the word of faith, which we preach, *Deut. 30.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saued.

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made vnto saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, * Whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be ashamed. *Esai. 28.

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iew and the Greeke: for the same Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all that call vpon him.

13 * For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shall be saued. * Ioel. 2. 3 actes 2. 21

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they haue not beleeued? and how shall they beleeue on him of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a Preacher?

15 And how shall they preach except they bee sent? as it is written: * How beautifull are the feete of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things? *Esai. 52. naum. 1.

16 But

Esay 53.1. John 12.38. 16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel. For Esaias saith, * Lord, who hath beleeued our || † report?

Or, preaching. 17 So then, faith commeth by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

Gr. the hearing of vs. 18 But I say, Haue they not heard? yes verely, * their sound went into all the earth, and their words vnto the ends of the world.

Psal. 19 4. Deut. 32. 21. 19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, * I will prouoke you to iealousie by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

Esay 65. 1. 20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, * I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest vnto them, that asked not after me.

Esay 65. 2. 21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I haue stretched forth my hands vnto a disobedient and gainesaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected though the rest were hardened. 18 The Gentiles may not insult vpon them.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people, which he foreknew. Wote ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel saying,

1 Kin. 19. 3 * Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine Altars, and I am left alone, and they seeke my life.

1 Kin. 19. 4 But what saith the answere of God vnto him? * I haue reserued to my selfe seuen thousand men, who haue not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Euen so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then it is no more of workes: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of workes, then is it no more grace, otherwise worke is no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were || blinded,

Or, hardned. Esay 29.10 Or, remorse Esay 6.9. 8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the spirit of || slumber, * eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

9 And

9 And Dauid saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling blocke, and a recompence vnto them. * Psal. 69.

10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they might not see and bow downe their backe alway. * Psal. 69.

11 I say then: haue they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid. But rather through their fall, saluation is come vnto the Gentiles, for to prouoke them to iealousie.

12 Now if the fall of them bee the riches of the world, and the ‖ diminishing of them, the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse? ‖ Or, decay or lesse.

13 For I speake to you, Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles. I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any meanes I may prouoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiuing of them bee, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lumpe is also holy: and if the roote be holy, so are the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde oliue tree wert grafted ‖ in amongst them, and with them partakest of the roote and fatnesse of the Oliue tree: ‖ Or, for th

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well: because of vnbelieke they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, take heede lest he also spare not thee.

22 Beholde therefore the goodnesse and seueritie of God: on them which fell, seueritie; but towards thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in vnbelieke, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou were cut out of the Oliue tree which is wilde by nature, and were graffed contrary to nature into a good Oliue tree: how much more shall these which bee the naturall branches, bee grafted into their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not brethren, that yee should be ignorant of this mystery (lest yee should bee wise in your owne conceits)

Or, hardnes. concepts) ‖ that blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall bee saued, as it is written, Isay. 59. 20 * There shall come out of Sion the deliuerer, and shall turne away vngodlinesse from Iacob.

27 For this is my couenant vnto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the Fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

Or, obeyed. 30 For as yee in times past haue not ‖ beleeued God, yet haue now obtained mercy through their vnbelieke:

Or, obeyed. 31 Euen so haue not these also now not ‖ beleeued, that through your mercy they may also obtaine mercy.

Or, shut em all vp gether. 32 For God hath ‖ concluded them all in vnbelieke, that he might haue mercy vpon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisedome and knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

Isay 40. 13 Iob. 9. 13. Cor. 2. 16. 34 * For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, or who hath beene his counseller?

35 Or who hath first giuen to him, and it shall bee recompenced vnto him againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things; to whom be glory for euer. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercies must moue vs to please God. 6 Euery man must attend his calling. 9 Loue and other dueties required. 19 Reuenge forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that yee present your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruice.

2 And bee not conformed to this world; but bee yee transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prooue what is that good, that acceptable and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace giuen vnto mee, to euery man that is among you, not to thinke of himselfe more highly then hee ought to thinke, but to thinke † soberly, according as God hath dealt to euery man the measure of faith.

Or, to sobrietie. 4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not the same office:

5 So

5 So we being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Hauing then gifts, differing according to the grace that is giuen to vs, whether prophecie, let vs prophesie according to the proportion of faith.

7 Or ministery, let vs wait on our ministring: or hee that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that || giueth, let him doe it || with simplicitie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with cheerefulnesse.

9 Let loue be without dissimulation: abhorre that which is euill, cleaue to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another || with brotherly loue, in honour preferring one another.

11 Not slothfull in business: feruent in spirit, seruing the Lord.

12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Distributing to the necessitie of Saints, giuen to hospitalitie.

14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse, and curse not.

15 Reioyce with them that do reioyce, and weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of the same minde one towards another. Mind not high things, but || condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your owne conceits.

17 Recompence to no man euill for euill. Prouide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, liue peaceably with all men.

19 Dearely beloued, auenge not your selues, but rather giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.

20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, giue him drinke. For in so doing thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head.

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

|| Or, impeteth.

|| Or, liberal.

|| Or, in the loue of the brethren.

|| Or, be content with meane thing.

*Deut. 32. 35.

* Pro. 25. 21.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Our duties to Magistrates 8 Loue is the fulfilling of the Law. 11 Against gluttonie, drunkennesse, and the workes of darkenesse.

LEt euery soule be subiect to the higher powers: For there is no power but of God. The powers that bee, are || ordeined of God.

|| Or, ordered.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good workes, but to the euill. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? doe that which is good, and thou shalt haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou doe that which is euill, be afraid: for hee beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the minister of God, a reuenger to execute wrath vpon him that doth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subiect, not onely for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually vpon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custome to whom custome, feare to whom feare, honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement, it is briefely comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore loue is the fulfilling of the Law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it his high time to awake out of sleepe: for now is our saluation neerer then when we beleeued.

12 The night is farre spent, the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast off the workes of darknesse, and let vs put on the armour of light.

13 Let vs walke || honestly as in the day; not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambering and wantonnesse, not in strife and enuying.

Or, decently

14 But put ye on the Lord Iesus Christ, and make not prouision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

CHAP. XIIII.

3 Men may not contemne nor condemne one another for things indifferent, 13 but take heede of giuing offence in them.

H Im that is weake in the faith, receiue you, but not to || doubtfull disputations.

Or, not to iudge his doubtfull thoughts.

2 For

2 For one beleeueth that he may eate all things: another who is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him that eateth not, iudge him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

4 Who art thou that iudgest another mans seruant? to his owne master he standeth or falleth; Yea he shall be holden vp: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day aboue another: another esteemeth euery day alike. Let euery one bee ‖ fully perswaded in his owne minde.

‖ Or, fully assured.

6 Hee that ‖ regardeth a day, regardeth it vnto the Lord: and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doeth not regard it. Hee that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giueth God thankes: and he that eateth not to the Lord, he eateth not, and giueth God thankes.

‖ Or, obseruth.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, and no man dieth to himselfe.

8 For whether wee liue, wee liue to the Lord: and whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether wee liue therefore or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and liuing.

10 But why doest * thou iudge thy brother? or why doest thou set at nought thy brother? wee shall all stand before the iudgement seat of Christ.

* 2. Cor. 5.

11 For it is written, * As I liue, saith the Lord, euery knee shall bow to mee, and euery tongue shall confesse to God.

* Esay 45.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue account of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more, but iudge this rather, that no man put a stumbling blocke or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing † vncleane of it selfe: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be † vncleane, to him it is vncleane.

† Gr. common.

15 But if thy brother be grieued with thy meat: now walkest thou not † charitably. Destroy not him with thy meate, for whom Christ died.

† Gr. common.

† Gr. according to charitie.

16 Let not then your good be euill spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drinke; but righteousnesse, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

1. Cor. 8. 1

18 For he that in these things seruetb Christ, is acceptable to God, and approued of men.

19 Let vs therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meate, destroy not the worke of God: all
.1.15. * things indeed are pure; but it is euill for that man who eateth with offence.

Cor.8.13 21 It is good neither to eat * flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weake.

22 Hast thou faith? haue it to thy selfe before God. Happy is hee that condemneth not himselfe in that thing which he alloweth.

discer- *and put-* *s diffe-* *between* *ies.*

23 And hee that || doubteth, is damned if hee eate, because he eateth not of faith: For whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must beare with the weake. 2 Wee may not please our selues, 7 but receiue one another, as Christ did vs all.

WEe then that are strong ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selues.

2 Let euery one of vs please his neighbour for his good to edification.

l 69.9 3 For euen Christ pleased not himselfe, but as it is written, * The reproaches of them that reproached thee, fell on me.

4 For whatsoeuer things were written aforetime, were written for our learning, that wee through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

Cor.1.10 5 * Now the God of patience and consolation graunt
after the *ple of.* you to bee like minded one towards another, || according to Christ Iesus;

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue yee one another, as Christ also receiued vs, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a Minister of the circumcision for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers:

l.18.9 9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse to thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.

u.32.43 10 And againe hee saith, * Reioyce yee Gentiles with his people.

al.117.1 11 And againe, * Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

12 An

12 And againe Esaias saith, * There shall be a roote of Iesse, and he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust. *Esay 1

13 Now the God of hope, fill you with all ioy and peace in beleeuing, that yee may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that yee also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another:

15 Neuertheleſſe, brethren, I haue written the more boldly vnto you, in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is giuen vnto me of God,

16 That I should bee the minister of Iesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the || offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. ||Or, sacrificing.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may glory through Iesus Christ, in those things which pertaine to God.

18 For I will not dare to speake of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by mee, to make the Gentiles obedient by word and deede,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue fully preached the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so haue I striued to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build vpon another mans foundation:

21 But as it is written, * To whom hee was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that haue not heard, shall vnderstand. *Esay. 52

22 For which cause also I haue beene || much hindered from comming to you. ||Or, many wayes, or ten times.

23 But now hauing no more place in these parts, and hauing a great desire these many yeeres to come vnto you,

24 Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with † your company. † Gr. with you. verse

25 But now I goe vnto Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine contribution for the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debters they are: For if the Gentiles haue beene made partakers

of their spirituall things, their duetie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I haue performed this, and haue sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine.

29 And I am sure that when I come vnto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that ye striue together with me, in your prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be deliuered from them that ‖ doe not beleeue in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue for Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

‖ Or, are disobedient.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul sendeth greeting to many, 17 and aduertiseth to take heede of those that cause dissention and offences, 21 and endeth with prayse and thankes to God.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That yee receiue her in the Lord as becommeth Saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse shee hath neede of you: for she hath beene a succourer of many, and of my selfe also.

3 Greete Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Iesus:

4 (Who haue for my life layde downe their owne necks: vnto whom, not onely I giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise greete the Church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloued Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia vnto Christ.

6 Greete Mary, who bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my kinsemen, and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the Apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys, my beloued.

10 Salute Apelles approoued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus ‖ houshold.

11 Salute Herodian my kinseman. Greete them that be of the ‖ houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

‖ Or, friends.

‖ Or, Friends.

12 Salute

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, marke them which cause diuisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which yee haue learned, and auoyde them.

18 For they that are such, serue not our Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne belly, and by good wordes and faire speaches deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad vnto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, and || simple concerning euill.

20 And the God of peace shall || bruise Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my worke-fellow, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsemen salute you.

22 I Tertius who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church, saluteth you. Erastus the Chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my Gospel, and the preaching of Iesus Christ, according to the reuelation of the mysterie which was kept secret, since the world began:

26 But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the Prophets according to the commandement of the euerlasting God, made knowen to all nations for the obedience of faith,

27 To God, onely wise, bee glory through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe seruant of the Church at Cenchrea.

|| Or, harmlesse.

|| Or, treade

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

1 After salutation and thanksgiuing, 10 hee exhorteth to vnitie, and 12 reproueth their dissensions. 18 God destroyeth the wisedome of the wise.

PAVL called to bee an Apostle of Iesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother,

2 Unto the Church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, called to bee Saints, * with all that in euery place call vpon the Name of Iesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours:

3 Grace be vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for the grace of God which is giuen you by Iesus Christ,

5 That in euery thing yee are enriched by him, in all vtterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Euen as the Testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that yee come behinde in no gift: waiting for the † comming of our Lord Iesus Christ,

8 Who shall also confirme you vnto the end, that yee may be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 * God is faithfull, by whom ye were called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.

10 Now I beseech you brethren, by the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee all speake the same thing, and that there bee no † diuisions among you: but that yee bee perfectly ioyned together in the same minde, and in the same iudgement.

11 For it hath beene declared vnto mee of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that euery one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius:

15 Lest

1 15.9.
1.1.7.
Reuela-
est. 5.
bisines.
18.24
18.8.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine owne name.

16 And I baptized also the houshold of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel: * not with wisedome of || words, lest the Crosse of Christ should be made of none effect. *2.Pet.1.1 || Or, speac

18 For the preaching of the Crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saued, it is the * power of God. *Rom. 1.1

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and will bring to nothing the * vnderstanding of the prudent. *Isai.29.1

20 * Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisedome of this world? *Isai.33.1

21 * For after that, in the wisedome of God, the world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching, to saue them that beleeue. *Rom. 1.2

22 For the * Iewes require a signe, and the Greekes seeke after wisedome. *Mat 12.3

23 But wee preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbling blocke, and vnto the Greekes foolishnesse:

24 But vnto them which are called, both Iewes and Greekes, Christ, the power of God, and the wisedome of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the weaknesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For yee see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weake things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty:

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are yee in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written, * Hee that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. *Iere.9.23

CHAP. II.

1 Paul preaching, though without excellencie of speach, or

of

of wisedome, yet 6 excelleth the wisedome of this world, and 14 the naturall mans vnderstanding.

Wisd. 1. 17. AND I, brethren, when I came to you, *came not with excellencie of speech, or of wisedome, declaring vnto you the testimony of God.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakenesse and in feare, and in much trembling.

2. Pet. 1. 20. 4 And my speech, and my preaching * was not with || enticing words of mans wisedome, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

Or, perswable. Greeke, bee.

5 That your faith should not † stand in the wisedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit, wee speake wisedome among them that are perfect: yet not the wisedome of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought:

7 But wee speake the wisedome of God in a mystery, euen the hidden wisedome which God ordeined before the world, vnto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glory.

Esai. 64. 4. 9 But as it is written, *Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither haue entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reuealed them vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of man which is in him? Euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we haue receiued, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that wee might know the things that are freely giuen to vs of God.

1. Pet. 1. 16. 13 *Which things also wee speake, not in the wordes which mans wisedome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spirituall things with spirituall.

14 But the naturall man receiueth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither can hee know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Pro. 27. 19. Or, discerneth. Or, discerneth.

15 * But hee that is spirituall, || iudgeth all things, yet he himselfe is || iudged of no man.

16 *For

16 *For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that hee may † instruct him? But we haue the minde of Christ.

*Rom. 11. Isai. 40. 13
† Gr. shall,

CHAP. III.

3 Strife and diuisions are arguments of a fleshly minde. 7 He that planteth and he that watereth are nothing.

AND I, brethren, could not speake vnto you as vnto spiritualls, but as vnto carnall, euen as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I haue fed you with milke, and not with meate: for hitherto ye were not able to beare it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you enuying, and strife, and || diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke † as men?

|| Or, factions
† Gr. according to man

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo? but ministers by whom ye beleeued, euen as the Lord gaue to euery man.

6 I haue planted, Apollo watered: but God gaue the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giueth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth, and hee that watereth, are one: * and euery man shall receiue his owne reward according to his owne labour.

* Psal. 62. 12. Prouerb. 24. 12. Matth. 16. 27. Rom. 2. 6. 1. Pet. 1. 17. Reuel. 22. 12. galat. 6. 5.

9 For we are labourers together with God, yee are Gods || husbandrie, ye are Gods building.

|| Or, tillage.

10 According to the grace of God which is giuen vnto me, as a wise master builder I haue laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let euery man take heede how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Iesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build vpon this foundation, gold, siluer, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Euery mans worke shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it † shall bee reuealed by fire, and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is.

† Gr. is reuealed.

14 If any mans worke abide which hee hath built thereupon, he shall receiue a reward.

15 If any mans worke shall be burnt, hee shall suffer losse: but he himselfe shall be saued: yet so, as by fire.

16 * Know ye not, that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

* 1. Cor. 19.

17 If

—destroy. 17 If any man || defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you seemeth to bee wise in this world, let him become a foole, that he may be wise.

Iob 5.13. 19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnes with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their owne craftinesse.

Psal. 94.11. 20 And againe, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let not man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours.

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 How to account of Ministers. 7 Wee haue nothing but we haue receiued it. 9 The Apostles. 15 are our fathers in Christ.

LEt a man so account of vs, as of the Ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of Christ.

2 Moreouer it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

r. day. 3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be iudged of you, or of mans † iudgement: yea, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not hereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

at.7.1. 5 * Therefore iudge nothing before the time, vntill
n.2.1. the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darknesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall euery man haue praise of God.

6 And these things brethren, I haue in a figure transferred to my selfe, and to Apollo, for your sakes, that yee might learne in vs not to thinke of men, aboue that which is written, that no one of you be puffed vp for one against another

r, distin- 7 For who † maketh thee to differ from another? and
heth thee. what hast thou that thou diddest not receiue? Now if thou diddest receiue it, why doest thou glory as if thou hadst not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, yee haue reigned as

as kings without vs, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the Apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a † spectacle vnto the world, and to Angels, and to men. † Gr. theate

10 Wee are fooles for Christs sake, but yee are wise in Christ. We are weake, but ye are strong: ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Euen vnto this present houre we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling-place,

12 * And labour, working with our owne hands: being reuiled, we blesse: being persecuted, we suffer it. *Acts. 20. 3 1. thes. 2. 9 2 thes. 3. 8.

13 * Being defamed, we entreat: wee are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scowring of all things vnto this day. *Mat. 5. 4

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though you haue tenne thousand instructors in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: For in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, who is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my wayes which bee in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Now some are puffed vp as though I would not come to you.

19 * But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed vp but the power. *Acts 19. 2 Iam. 4. 15.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? Shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person. 7 The old leauen must bee purged out. 10 Heinous offenders to be auoided.

IT is reported commonly, that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather mourned, that hee that hath done this deede, might be taken away from among you.

Col. 2. 5.
r, determined.

3 * For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue || iudged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deede,

4 In the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, when yee are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

1 Tim. 1. 20

5 * To deliuer such a one vnto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may bee saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

Gal. 5. 9.

6 Your glorying is not good: * know yee not that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therefore the old leauen, that ye may be a new lumpe: as ye are vnleauened. For euen Christ our Passeouer || is sacrificed for vs.

y, is slaine.
r, holiday.

8 Therefore let vs keepe || the Feast, not with old leauen, neither with the leauen of malice and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of sincerite and trueth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, not to companie with fornicators.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs goe out of the world.

11 But now I haue written vnto you, not to keepe company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or couetous, or an idolater, or railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one, no, not to eate.

12 For what haue I to doe to iudge them also that are without? doe ye not iudge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God iudgeth. Therefore put away from among your selues that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

1 Goe not to law with the brethren: 6 especially vnder Infidels. 9 The vnrighteous shall not inherite Gods kingdome. 15 Our bodies are Christs members.

DAre any of you, hauing a matter against another, goe to law before the vniust, and not before the Saints?

2 Doe yee not know that the Saints shall iudge the world? And if the world shall be iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know yee not that wee shall iudge Angels? how much more things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then yee haue iudgements of things perteining to this life, set them to iudge who are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I

5 I speake to your shame, Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that shall bee able to iudge betweene his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the vnbeleeuers?

7 Now therefore there is vtterly a fault among you, because ye goe to law one with another: Why doe yee not rather take wrong? Why doe yee not rather suffer your selues to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you doe wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know yee not, that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the Kingdome of God? Be not deceiued, neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselues with mankind,

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor reuilers, nor extortioners, shall inherite the kingdome of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but yee are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto mee, but all things are not || expedient, all things are lawfull for mee, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any.

|| Or, profitable.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised vp the Lord, and will also raise vs vp by his owne power.

15 Know yee not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is ioyned to an harlot, is one body? for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: Euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body.

19 What, know yee not that your body is the Temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which yee haue of God, and ye are not your owne?

20 For yee are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

CHAP.

2 Marriage, 4 a remedy against fornication, 10 not lightly to be dissolued. 18. 20 Euery man must bee content with his calling. 25 Of Virginitie.

NOw concerning the things whereof yee wrote vnto me, It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheleſſe, to auoyd fornication, let euery man haue his owne wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

3 Let the husband render vnto the wife due beneuolence: and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power ouer her owne body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power ouer his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except it bee with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and come together againe, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore vnto the vnmarried and widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I.

9 But if they cannot conteine, let them marry: for it is better to marry then to burne.

10 And vnto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speake I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that beleeueth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leaue him.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified by the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children vncleane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart: let him depart. A brother or a sister is not vnder bondage in such cases: but God hath called vs † to peace

† Gr. in peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt

shalt saue thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke, and so ordaine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become vncircumcised: is any called in vncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.

20 Let euery man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a seruant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, vse it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord being a seruant, is the Lords † free man: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christs seruant.

† Greeke. made free.

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the seruants of men.

24 Brethren, let euery man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgines, I haue no commandement of the Lord, yet I giue my iudgement, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present || distresse, I say, that it is good for a man so to be.

|| Or, necessitie.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed, Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if a virgine marry, shee hath not sinned: nevertheless, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, The time is short. It remaineth, that both they that haue wiues, bee as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would haue you without carefulnesse. He that is vnmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also betweene a wife and a virgin: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the

Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne profit, not that I may cast a snare vpon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend vpon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man thinke that he behaueth himselfe vncomely toward his virgin, if she passe the floure of her age, and need so require, let him doe what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Neuertheleſſe, he that standeth steadfast in his heart, hauing no necessitie, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he wil keepe his virgin, doeth well.

38 So then he that giueth her in marriage, doth well: but he that giueth her not in marriage doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Law as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to be married to whom she will, onely in the Lord.

40 But she is happyer if she so abide, after my iudgement: and I thinke also that I haue the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 We must abstaine from things offered to idoles, 8, 9 and not abuse our liberty to offend our brethren, 11 but bridle our knowledge with charitie.

NOw as touching things offered vnto idoles, we know that wee all haue knowledge. Knowledge puffeth vp: but charitie edifieth.

2 And if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, ỳ same is knowen of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice vnto Idoles, we know that an idole is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there bee that are called gods, whether in heauen or in earth (as there be gods many, and lords many:)

6 But to vs there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we || in him, and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

|| Or, for him. Rom. 11, 36

7 Howbeit there is not in euery man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idole vnto this houre, eate it as a thing offered vnto an idole, and their conscience being weake is defiled.

8 But meate commendeth vs not vnto God: for neither if we eate, || are we the better: neither if we eate not, || are we the worse.

|| Or, haue the more.

9 But take heede lest by any meanes this || liberty of yours become a stumbling blocke to them that are weake.

|| Or, haue the lesse.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idoles Temple: shal not the conscience of him that is weake, be † emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idoles?

|| Or, power.

† Gr. edifie.

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weake brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when yee sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meate make my brother to offend, I will eate no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls liberty. 7 The Minister must liue by the Gospel. 15 18 Yet he would not be chargeable, 22 nor offensiue. 24 Our life like a race.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? Are not you my worke in the Lord?

2 If I bee not an Apostle vnto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seale of mine Apostleship are yee in the Lord.

3 Mine answere to them that doe examine me, is this:

4 Haue we not power to eat and to drinke?

5 Haue wee not power to leade about a sister a || wife aswell as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?

|| Or, woman.

6 Or I onely, and Barnabas, haue not wee power to forbeare working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the Law the same also?

9 For it is written in the Law of Moses, * Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ore that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen?

* Deut. 25

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sake, no doubt this is written: that hee that ploweth, should

plow in hope: and that hee that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

Rom.15.27 11 * If we haue sowen vnto you spiritnall things, is it a great thing if we shall reape your carnall things?

12 If others be partakers of this power ouer you, are not wee rather? Neuertheleſſe, wee haue not vſed this power: but ſuffer all things, leſt wee ſhould hinder the Gospel of Christ.

Deut.18.1 13 * Doe yee not know that they which minister about holy things, || liue of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

Or, feed.

14 Euen ſo hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things, Neither haue I written theſe things, that it ſhould be ſo done vnto mee: for it were better for me to die, then that any man ſhould make my glorying voyd.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to glory of: for neceſſity is laid vpon me, yea, woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe this thing willingly, I haue a reward, but if againſt my will, a diſpenſation of the Gospel is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely, that when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuſe not my power in the Gospel

19 For though I bee free from all men, yet haue I made my ſelfe ſeruant vnto all, that I might gaine the more.

20 And vnto the Iewes, I became as a Iew, that I might gaine the Iewes, to them that are vnder the Law as vnder the Law, that I might gaine them that are vnder the Law:

21 To them that are without Law, as without Law (being not without Law to God, but vnder the law to Christ,) that I might gaine them that are without Law.

22 To the weake became I as weake, that I might gaine the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes ſaue ſome.

23 And this I doe for the Gospels ſake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know yee not that they which runne in a race, run all, but one receiueth the prize? So runne that yee may obtaine.

25 And every man that ſtriueth for the maſterie, is temperate

temperate in all things: now they doe it to obtaine a corruptible crowne, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre:

27 But I keepe vnder my body, and bring it into subiection: lest that by any meanes when I haue preached to others, I my selfe be a castaway.

CHAP. X.

1 The Iewes Sacraments 6 are a type of ours, 7 and their punishments 11 our examples. 21 We must not make the Lords Table the table of deuils.

MOreouer brethren, I would not that yee should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were vnder the cloud, and all passed thorow the Sea:

2 And were all baptized vnto Moses in the cloude, and in the Sea:

3 And did all eate the same spiritual meat:

4 And did all drinke the same spiritual drinke: (for they dranke of that spiritual Rocke that || followed them: and that rocke was Christ.)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were ouerthrowen in the wilderness.

6 Now these things were † our examples, to the intent wee should not lust after euill things, as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, * The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed, and * fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, * and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmure yee, as some of them also murmured, and were * destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened vnto them for || ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heede lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is || common to man: but God is faithfull, who will not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you are able: but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to beare it.

|| Or, went with them.

† Gr. our gures.

* Exod. 3 psal. 106

* Num. 2

* Num. 2

* Num. 37.

|| Or, type

|| Or, moderate.

14 Wherefore my dearely beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as to wise men: Iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which wee blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For wee being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice to idoles is any thing?

20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles
eu.32.17 * sacrifice, they sacrifice vnto deuils, and not to God: and
l.106.37 I would not that yee should haue fellowshippe with deuils.

21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of deuils: yee cannot be partakers of the Lords Table, and of the table of deuils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lord to iealousie? are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for mee, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for mee, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is sold in the shambles, that eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

eu.10.14 26 For * the earth is the Lords, & the fulnesse thereof.
l.24.1. 27 If any of them that beleeue not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to goe, whatsoeuer is set before you eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, eate not for his sake that shewed it,
eu.10.14 and for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the
l.24.1. fulnesse thereof.

29 Conscience I say, not thine owne, but of the others: for why is my liberty iudged of another mans conscience?

y, thankes- 30 For, if I by || grace bee a partaker, why am I euill
ing. spoken of for that for which I giue thankes?

31 Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the
Gr. Greekes † Gentiles, nor to the Church of God.

33 Euen

33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many, that they may bee saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproueth them because in the holy assemblies, 4 men prayed with their heads couered, 6 and women vncouered: 21 For prophaning the Lords Supper, 25 The first institution thereof.

BEe yee followers of me, euen as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you brethren, that you remember mee in all things, & keepe the || ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

|| Or, traditions.

3 But I would haue you know, that the head of euery man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Euery man praying or prophesying, hauing his head couered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head vncouered, dishonoureth her head: for that is euen all one as if she were shauen.

6 For if the woman bee not couered, let her also bee shorne: if it be a shame for a woman to bee shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For a man indeede ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to haue power || on her head, because of the Angels.

|| That is, couering, signe that is vnder the power of her husband.

11 Neuertheleſſe, neither is the man without the woman: neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: euen so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not euen nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a glory to her: for her haire is giuen her for a || couering.

|| Or, vail.

16 But if any man seeme to bee contentious, wee haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 Now in this ẏ I declare vnto you, I praise you not

that you come together, not for the better, but for ꝑ worse.
18 For first of all when yee come together in the
Schismes. Church, I heare that there be || diuisions among you, and
I partly beleeue it.
Sects. 19 For there must bee also || heresies among you, that
they which are approoued may bee made manifest among
you.
20 When yee come together therefore into one place,
ye can- this is || not to eate the Lords Supper.
eate. 21 For in eating, euery one taketh before other, his
owne supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.
22 What, haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in?
them Or despise ye the Church of God, and shame || them that
are haue not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in
ye. this? I praise you not.
23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which also I
delliuered vnto you, that the Lord Iesus the same night
in which he was betrayed, tooke bread:
Mat.26.16. 24 * And when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and
Luk.14.22. sayd, Take, eate, this is my body, which is broken for
1.22.19. you, this doe || in remembrance of me.
for a re- 25 After the same maner also hee tooke the cup when
brance. hee had supped, saying, This cup is the new Testament
in my blood: this doe ye, as oft as ye drinke it, in remem-
brance of me.
26 For as often as yee eate this bread, and drinke this
shew yee. cup, || yee doe shew the Lords death till he come.
27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and
drinke this cup of the Lord vnworthily, shall bee guiltie
of the body and blood of the Lord.
28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let him eate
of that bread, and drinke of that cup.
29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth
iudge- and drinketh || damnation to himselfe, not discerning the
Lords body.
30 For this cause many are weake and sickely among
you, and many sleepe.
31 For if we would iudge our selues, we should not bee
iudged.
32 But when wee are iudged, wee are chastened of the
Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.
33 Wherefore my brethren, when yee come together to
eate, tarry one for another.
34 And if any man hunger, let him eate at home, that
iudge. ye come not together vnto || condemnation. And the rest
will I set in order when I come.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

1 Spirituall gifts 4 are diuers, 7 yet all to profite. 12 As it is in the naturall body, 17 so it should bee in the mystical body of Christ.

NOw concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Yee know that yee were Gentiles, carried away vnto these dumbe idoles, euen as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I giue you to vnderstand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Iesus ‖ accursed: and that no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, Anathema.

4 Now there are diuersities of giftes, but the same spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the spirit is giuen to euery man to profit withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the spirit, the worde of wisedome, to another the word of knowledge by ẏ same spirit.

9 To another faith by the same spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophesie, to another discerning of spirits, to another diuers kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one and the selfe same spirit, diuiding to euery man seuerally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.

13 For by one spirit are wee all baptized into one body, whether we bee Iewes or † Gentiles, whether we be bond or free: and haue bene all made to drinke into one spirit.

† Gr. Greeks.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members, euery one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor againe, the head to the feete, I haue no neede of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the body which seeme to bee more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those members of the body which we thinke to bee lesse honourable, vpon these wee || bestow more abundant honour, and our vncomely parts haue more abundant comelinesse.

r, put on.

24 For our comely parts haue no neede: but God hath tempered the body together, hauing giuen more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no || schisme in the body, but that the members should haue the same care one for another.

r, division.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now yee are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings; helpes in gouernments, || diuerslities of tongues.

r, kindes.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers? are all || workers of miracles?

r, powers.

30 Haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interpret?

31 But couet earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I vnto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The most excellent giftes are nothing without Charitie. 4 The prayse thereof. 13 It is preferred before hope and faith.

THough I speake with the tongues of men and of Angels, and haue not charitie, I am become as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I haue the gift of prophesie, and vnderstand all mysteries and all knowledge: and though I haue all faith, so that I could remoone mountaines, and haue no charitie, I am nothing.

3 And

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feede the poore, and though I giue my body to be burned, and haue not charitie, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charitie suffereth long, and is kinde: charitie enuieth not: charitie ‖ vaunteth not it selfe, is not puffed vp,

5 Doeth not behaue it selfe vnseemely, seeketh not her owne, is not easily prouoked, thinketh no euill,

6 Reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth ‖ in the trueth:

7 Beareth all things, beleeueth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charitie neuer faileth: but whether there be prophesies, they shall faile, whether there be tongues, they shal cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I ‖ thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now wee see through a glasse, † darkely: but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know euen as also I am knowen.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three, but the greatest of these is charitie.

‖ Or, is not rash.

‖ Or, with the trueth.

‖ Or, reason.

† Gr. in an riddle.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Prophesie commended and preferred before speaking with tongues; 12 Both must be referred to edification. 34 Women must not speake in the Church.

FOllow after charitie, and desire spiritualll gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For hee that speaketh in an vnknowen tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man † vnderstandeth him: howbeit in the spirit hee speaketh mysteries.

3 But hee that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 Hee that speaketh in an vnknowen tongue, edifieth himselfe: but hee that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I would that yee all spake with tongues, but rather that yee prophesied: for greater is hee that prophesieth, then hee that speaketh with tongues, except hee interpret, that the Church may receiue edifying.

† Gr. heare

6 Now

6 Now brethren, if I come vnto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speake to you, either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 And euen things without life giuing sound, whether pipe or harpe, except they giue a distinction in the ‖ sounds, how shall it bee knowen what is piped or harped?

Or, tunes.

8 For if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to the battell?

9 So likewise you, except yee vtter by the tongue words † easie to be vnderstood, how shall it bee knowen what is spoken? for ye shall speake into the ayre.

Gr. significant.

10 There are, it may be, so many kindes of voyces in the world, and none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voyce, I shall bee vnto him that speaketh a Barbarian, and hee that speaketh shall bee a Barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen so yee, forasmuch as ye are zealous † of spirituall gifts, seeke that yee may excell to the edifying of the Church.

Speeke, of spirits.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an vnknowen tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an vnknowen tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and will pray with vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall hee that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say Amen at thy giuing of thankes, seeing hee vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily giuest thankes well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake with tongues more then you all.

19 Yet in the Church I had rather speake fiue words with my vnderstanding, that by my voyce I might teach others also, then tenne thousand wordes in an vnknowen tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in vnderstanding: howbeit, in malice bee yee children, but in vnderstanding bee † men.

perfect, a ripe

21 In the Law it is * written, With men of other tongues, and other lips will I speake vnto this people: and yet for all that will they not heare me, saith the Lord.

Esa. 28. 11.

22 Where-

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but prophecying seruech not for them that beleeue not, but for them that beleeue.

23 If therefore the whole Church bee come together into some place, and all speake with tongues, and there come in those that are vnlearned, or vnbeleeuers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned: he is conuinced of all, he is iudged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling downe on his face he will worship God and report that God is in you of a trueth.

26 How is it then brethren? when ye come together, euery one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a reuelation, hath an interpretation: Let all things be done to edifying.

27 If any man speake in an vnknowen tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there bee no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, and let him speake to himselfe and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge.

30 If anything be reuealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not the authour of † confusion, but of peace: as in all Churches of the Saints. † *Gr. tum or vnqui*

34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permitted vnto them to speake; but they are commanded to be vnder obedience: as also saith the * Law. *Gen. 3.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to bee a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Where-

39 Wherefore brethren conet to prophesie, and forbid not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

CHAP. XV.

2 By Christs resurrection, 12 hee prooueth the necessitie of our resurrection: 21 The fruit, 35 and maner thereof, 51 and the change of them that shall be then aliue.

MOreouer brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which also you haue receiued, and wherein ye stand,

2 By which also ye are saued, if ye || keepe in memory † what I preached vnto you, vnlesse yee haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all, that which I also receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes according to the Scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose againe the third day according to the Scriptures:

5 And that hee was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.

6 After that he was seene of aboue fiue hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remaine vnto this present, but some are fallen asleepe.

7 After that, hee was seene of Iames, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all hee was seene of mee also, as of || one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meete to bee called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God, I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed vpon me was not in vaine, but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is in me:

11 Therefore whether it were I, or they, so we preach, and so ye beleeued.

12 Now if Christ bee preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ bee not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, because wee haue testified of God, that he raised vp Christ: whom he raised not vp, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For

y, hold fast
Gr. by what
ech.

, an ab-
ime.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.
17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine, ye are yet in your sinnes.
18 Then they also which are fallen asleepe in Christ, are perished.
19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, wee are of all men most miserable.
20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first fruits of them that slept.
21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made aliue.
23 But euery man in his owne order. Christ the first fruits, afterwards they that are Christs at his comming.
24 Then commeth the end, when hee shall haue deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he shall haue put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power.
25 For he must reigne till he hath put all enemies vnder his feet.
26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.
27 For hee hath put all things vnder his feete: but when he saith, All things are put vnder him, it is manifest ẏ he is accepted which did put all things vnder him.
28 And when all things shall bee subdued vnto him, then shall the Sonne also himselfe bee subiect vnto him that put all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.
29 Else what shall they doe that are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?
30 And why stand we in ieopardie euery houre?
31 I protest by || your reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daily.
32 If || after the maner of men I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus, what aduantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let vs eat and drinke, for to morrow we die.
33 Bee not deceiued: euill communications corrupt good manners.
34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sinne not: for some haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.
35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised vp? and with what body doe they come?
36 Thou foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened except it die.

||Some read *ouer.*

||*Or, to speake after the manner of men.*

37 And

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall bee, but bare graine, it may chance of wheat, or of some other graine

38 But God giueth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to euery seed his owne body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the Sunne, another of the Moone, and another glory of the Starres: for one starre differeth from another starre in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sowen in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sowen in weakenesse, it is raised in power.

44 It is sowen a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall body. There is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 And so it is written: The first man Adam was made a liuing soule, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit, that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.

47 The first man is of the earth earthie: The second man is the Lord from heauen.

48 As is the earthie, such are they that are earthy, and as is the heauenly, such are they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthy, we shall also beare the image of the heauenly.

50 Now this I say brethren that flesh and blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God: neither doeth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: wee shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye, at the last trumpe, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortall must put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible shall haue put on incorruption, and this mortall shall haue put on immortalitie,

then

then shall bee brought to passe the saying that is written, * Death is swallowed vp in victory. * Ose 13.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O || graue, where is thy victory? || Or, hell.

56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the Law.

57 But thankes bee to God, which giueth vs the victory, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be yee stedfast, vnmoueable, alwayes abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The brethrens wants must be relieued. 10 Timothie commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 16 Salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the Saints, as I haue giuen order to the Churches of Galatia, euen so doe ye,

2 Vpon the first day of the weeke, let euery one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoeuer you shall approoue by your letters, them will I send to bring your † liberality vnto Hierusalem. † Gr. gift.

4 And if it bee meet that I goe also, they shall goe with me.

5 Now I will come vnto you, when I shall passe thorow Macedonia: for I doe passe thorow Macedonia.

6 And it may bee that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring mee on my iourney, whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tary a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus till Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me, and there are many aduersaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without feare: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come vnto mee: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren, but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall haue conuenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men; be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charitie.

15 I beseech you brethren (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they haue addicted themselues to the ministery of the Saints.)

16 That ye submit your selues vnto such, and to euery one that helpeth with vs, and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they haue supplied.

18 For they haue refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the Church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet yee one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

3 The Apostle encourageth them against troubles, 12 and sheweth the sinceritie of his preaching, 15 and excuseth his not comming to them.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed bee, God euen the Father of our Lord Iesus

Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith wee our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation also abounded by Christ:

6 And whether we bee afflicted, it is for your consolation and saluation, which || is effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings, which wee also suffer; or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and saluation. || Or, is wrought.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall yee be also of the consolation.

8 For wee would not, brethren, haue you ignorant of our trouble which came to vs in Asia, that wee were pressed out of measure aboue strength, in so much that wee despaired euen of life.

9 But wee had the || sentence of death in our selues, that we should not trust in our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead. || Or, answer.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and doeth deliuer: in whom we trust that he will yet deliuer vs.

11 You also helping together by prayer for vs, that for the gift bestowed vpon vs by the meanes of many persons, thankes may be giuen by many on our behalfe.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity & godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdome, but by the grace of God, we haue had our conuersation in the world, & more abundantly to vnwards.

13 For wee write none other things vnto you, then what you reade or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge euen to the end.

14 As also you haue acknowledged vs in part, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye also are ours, in the day of the Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence, I was minded to come vnto you before, that you might haue a second || benefit. || Or, grace.

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and of you to bee brought on my way toward Iudea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, doe I purpose according to the flesh, that with mee there should be yea, yea; and nay, nay?

Or, preaching.

18 But as God is true, our ‖ word toward you, was not yea and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, euen by mee, and Siluanus and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay, but in him was Yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and in him Amen, vnto the glory of God by vs.

21 Now hee which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs, is God,

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreouer, I call God for a record vpon my soule, that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinth.

24 Not for that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 The reason of his not comming. 6 Of the excommunicate person. 12 Paul commeth to Troas, 13 from thence to Macedonia. 14 The successe of his preaching in euery place.

BUt I determined this with my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauinesse.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is hee then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote this same vnto you, lest when I came, I should haue sorrow from them of whom I ought to reioyce, hauing confidence in you all, that my ioy is the ioy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote vnto you with many teares, not that you should be grieued, but that yee might know the loue which I haue more abundantly vnto you.

5 But if any haue caused griefe, hee hath not grieued me but in part: that I may not ouercharge you all.

Or, censure

6 Sufficient to such a man is this ‖ punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7 So that contrariwise, yee ought rather to forgiue him, and comfort him, lest perhaps, such a one should bee swallowed vp with ouermuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you should confirme your loue towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proofe of you, whether yee be obedient in all things.

10 To whom yee forgiue any thing, I forgiue also: for

for if I forgaue any thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your sakes forgaue I it, ‖ in the person of Christ,

11 Lest Satan should get an aduantage of vs: for we are not ignorant of his deuices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christs Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto mee of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leaue of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thankes be vnto God, which alwayes causeth vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For wee are vnto God a sweete sauour of Christ in them that are saued, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the sauour of death vnto death: and to the other, the sauour of life vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many which ‖ corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speake we in Christ.

‖ Or, in the sight.

‖ Or, deale deceitfully wi

CHAP. III.

1 The commendation of Pauls ministery. 6 A comparison betweene the ministery of the Law and the Gospel.

DOe we begin againe to commend our selues, or neede we, as some others, Epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

2 Yee are our Epistle written in our hearts, knowen and read of all men.

3 Forasmuch as yee are manifestly declared to bee the Epistle of Christ ministred by vs, written not with inke, but with the spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in the fleshie tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue wee through Christ to Godward:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues to thinke any thing, as of our selues: but our sufficiency is of God:

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the new Testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit ‖ giueth life.

‖ Or, quickeneth.

7 But if the ministration of death written, and engrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit bee rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doeth the ministration of righteousnesse exceede in glory.

10 For euen that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away, was glorious, much more that which remaineth, is glorious.

12 Seeing then that wee haue such hope, we vse great ‖ plainenesse of speech.

‖ boldnesse

13 And not as Moses, which put a vaile ouer his face, that the children Israel could not stedfastly looke to the end of that which is abolished;

14 But their mindes were blinded: for vntill this day remaineth the same vaile vntaken away, in the reading of the olde Testament: which vaile is done away in Christ.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is vpon their heart.

16 Neuertheleſſe, when it shall turne to the Lord, the vaile shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But wee all, with open face beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, euen as ‖ by the Spirit of the Lord.

‖ or, of the Lord the Spirit.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls sinceritie and diligence in preaching, 7 and of his troubles for the same.

Therefore seeing wee haue this ministery, as wee haue receiued mercy, we faint not:

2 But haue renounced the hidden things of † dishonesty, not walking in craftinesse, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the trueth, commending our selues to euery mans conscience, in the sight of God.

† or shame.

3 But if our Gospel bee hidde, it is hid to them that are lost:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which beleeue not, lest the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine vnto them.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants, for Iesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkenesse, hath shined in our hearts, to giue the light of the

the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.

7 But wee haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of the power may be of God, and not of vs.

8 Wee are troubled on euery side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but || not in despaire;

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast downe, but not destroyed.

10 Alwayes bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life also of Iesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which liue, are alway deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life in you.

13 We hauing the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken: we also beleeue, and therefore speake.

14 Knowing that he which rayled vp the Lord Iesus, shall rayse vp vs also by Iesus, and shall present vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might, through the thanksgiuing of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause wee faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for vs a farre more exceeding and eternal weight of glory,

18 While wee looke not at the things which are seene, but at the things which are not seene: for the things which are seene, are temporall, but the things which are not seene, are eternall.

|| Or, not altogether without helpe of meanes.

* Psal. 116. 20.

CHAP. V.

1 That in hope of immortall glory, 9 and in expectance of it, and of the generall iudgement, he laboureth to keepe a good conscience.

FOr wee know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolued, wee haue a building of God, an house not made with hand, eternall in the heauens.

2 For in this we groane earnestly, desiring to bee clothed vpon with our house, which is from heauen:

3 If so be that being clothed, wee shall not bee found naked.

4 For we that are in this Tabernacle, doe groane, being burdened, not for that wee would bee vnclothed, but clothed vpon, that mortalitie might bee swallowed vp of life.

5 Now hee that hath wrought vs for the selfe same thing, is God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore wee are alwayes confident, knowing that whilest wee are at home in the body, wee are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, not by sight.)

8 Wee are confident, I say, and willing rather to bee absent from the body, and to bee present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we || labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

|| endeauour.

10 For wee must all appeare before the Iudgement seate of Christ, that euery one may receiue the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, wee perswade men; but wee are made manifest vnto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commmend not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you occasion to glory on our behalfe, that you may haue somewhat to answere them, which glory † in appearance, and not in heart.

† in the heart.

13 For whether we be beside our selues, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the loue of Christ constraineth vs, because we thus iudge: that if one died for all, then were all dead.

15 And that he died for all, that they which liue, should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we haue knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, || hee is a new creature: * old things are past away, behold, all things are become new.

|| let him

* Isai. 43.19. Rev. 21.5.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled vs to himselfe by Iesus Christ, & hath giuen to vs the ministery of reconciliation,

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world vnto himselfe, not imputing their trespasses vnto them,

them, and hath || committed vnto vs the word of reconciliation.

|| Or, put in vs.

20 Now then wee are Ambassadours for Christ, as though God did beseech you by vs; wee pray you in Christs stead, be yee reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, who knew no sinne, that wee might bee made the righteousnesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of Pauls faithfulnesse in his ministery. 14 Exhortation to auoyde idolaters.

WEe then as workers together with him, beseech you also, that yee receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

2 (For hee sayth, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of saluation.)

* Isai. 49. 8.

3 Giuing no offence in any thing, that the ministery be not blamed:

4 But in all things † approuing our selues, as the ministers of God in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

† Gr. commending.

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in || tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

|| Or, in tossings to & fro.

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers, and yet true:

9 As vnknowen, and yet well knowen: as dying, and behold we liue: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alwayes reioycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O yee Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Yee are not straitned in vs, but yee are straitned in your owne bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the same, (I speake as vnto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Bee not vnequally yoked together with vnbeleeuers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with vnrighte-

rightcousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeueth, with an Infidell?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles? for yee are the Temple of the liuing God, as God hath sayd, * I will dwell in them, and walke in them, and I will bee their God, and they shall bee my people.

Leui. 26. 12

Esai. 52. 11.

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and bee yee separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the vncleane thing, and I will receiue you,

Iere. 31. 1.

18 * And will be a Father vnto you, and ye shall be my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

1 Hee exhorteth to puritie, 3 and sheweth what comfort hee tooke in his afflictions.

HAuing therefore these promises (dearely beloued) let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs, we haue wronged no man, we haue corrupted no man, we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condemne you: For I haue said before, that you are in our hearts to die and liue with you.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speach toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding ioyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on euery side; without were fightings, within were feares.

6 Neuertheleſſe, God that comforteth those that are cast downe, comforted vs by the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming onely, but by the consolation wherewith hee was comforted in you, when hee told vs your earnest desire, your mourning, your feruent minde toward me, so that I reioyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorie with a leter, I doe not repent, though I did repent: For I perceiue that the same Epistle hath made you sorie, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I reioyce, not that yee were made sorrie, but that yee sorrowed to repentance: for yee were made sorrie ‖after a godly maner, that ye might receiue dammage by vs in nothing.

‖ Or, according to God.

10 For

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to saluation not to be repented of, but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold this selfe same thing that yee sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selues, yea, what indignation, yea, what feare, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeale, yea, what reuenge; In all things ye haue approoued your selues to be cleare in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God, might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more ioyed wee for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as wee spake all things to you in trueth, euen so our boasting which I made before Titus, is found a trueth.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilest hee remembreth the obedience of you all, how with feare and trembling you receiued him. †Gr. bowels

16 I reioyce therefore that I haue confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Hee stirreth them vp to contribute to the Saints, 16 and commendeth Titus, and other that were come to them purposely for this businesse.

MOreouer brethren, wee doe you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the Churches of Macedonia,

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their ioy, and their deepe poueryty, abounded vnto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to their power (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themselues:

4 Praying vs with much entreaty, that wee would receiue the gift, and take vpon vs the fellowship of the ministring to the Saints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gaue their owne selues vnto the Lord, & vnto vs by the will of God.

6 Insomuch that wee desired Titus, that as hee had begun, so he would also finish in you, the same grace also.

7 Therefore (as yee abound in euery thing, in faith, and vtterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue to vs) see that yee abound in this grace also.

8 I speake not by commandement, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to proone the sincerite of your loue.

9 For yee know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that though hee was rich: yet for your sakes hee became poore, that ye through his pouerty might be rich.

10 And herein I giue my aduise, for this is expedient for you, who haue begun before, not onely to doe, but also
willing. to be † forward a yeere agoe.

11 Now therefore performe the doing of it, that as there was a readinesse to will, so there may bee a performance also out of that which you haue.

12 For if there bee first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I meane not that othermen bee eased, and you burthened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may bee a supply for their want, that their abundance also may bee a supply for your want, that there may bee equality,

o. 16.18. 15 As it is written, * He that had gathered much, had nothing ouer: and hee that had gatherd little, had no lacke.

16 But thankes bee to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeede he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And wee haue sent with him the brother, whose prayse is in the Gospel, throughout all the Churches.

19 And not that onely, but who was also chosen of the
gift. Churches to trauaile with vs with this || grace which is administred by vs to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready minde.

20 Auoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance which is administred by vs.

21 Prouiding for honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And wee haue sent with them our brother, whom we haue oftentimes proued diligent in many things, but now much more diligent vpon the great confidence
, he hath. which || I haue in you.

23 Whether any doe enquire of Titus, hee is my partner and fellow helper concerning you: or our brethren bee enquired of, they are the messengers of the Churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Where-

24 Wherefore shew yee to them, and before the Churches, the proofe of your loue, and of our boasting on your behalfe.

CHAP. IX.

1 Hee sheweth why he sent Titus, 6 and stirreth them vp to a bountifull almes, 10 which shall yeeld them a great increase.

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked very many.

3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should bee in vaine in this behalfe, that as I said, ye may be ready.

4 Lest happily if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you vnprepared, we (that we say not you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would goe before vnto you, and make vp before hand your || bountie, || whereof ye had notice before that the same might be ready, as a matter of bounty, not of couetousnesse.

6 But this I say, Hee which soweth sparingly, shall reape sparingly: and hee which soweth bountifully, shall reape bountifully.

7 Euery man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him giue; not grudgingly, or of necessitie: for * God loueth a cheerefull giuer.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that yee alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abound to euery good worke,

9 (As it is written: * He hath dispersed abroad: He hath giuen to the poore: his righteousnesse remaineth for euer.

10 Now hee that * ministreth seed to the sower, both minister bread for your foode, and multiply your seed sowen, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse.)

11 Being enriched in euery thing to all bountifulnesse, which causeth through vs thanksgiuing to God.

12 For the administration of this seruice, not onely supplieth the want of the Saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgiuings vnto God,

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they

† Gr bless.
|| Or, which hath beene much spoken of before.

* Pro. 11. 1. rom. 12. 8. eccle. 35. 9.

* Psal. 112. 9.

* Esa. 55. 10.

they glorifie God for your professed subiection vnto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution vnto them, and vnto all men:

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be vnto God for his vnspeakeable gifts.

CHAP. X.

1 Pauls spirituall might and authority against all aduersaries, 7 aswell when he is present as absent. 12 Not to reach beyond our compasse.

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenesse and gentlenesse of Christ, who || in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you:

r, in outward appearance.

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I thinke to be bold against some which || thinke of vs as if we walked according to the flesh.

r, reckon.

3 For though we walke in the flesh, we doe not warre after the flesh.

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty || through God to the pulling downe of strong holds.)

r, to God.

5 Casting downe || imaginations, and euery high thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuity euery thought to the obedience of Christ:

r, reasonings.

6 And hauing in a readinesse to reuenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Doe yee looke on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himselfe, that he is Christs, let him of himselfe thinke this againe, that as he is Christs, euen so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authoritie (which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seeme as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and powerfull, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such a one thinke this, that such as wee are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will wee be also in deed when we are present.

12 For wee dare not make our selues of the number, or compare our selues with some that commend themselues:

selues: but they measuring themselues by themselues, and comparing themselues among themselues, || are not wise.

13 But wee will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the || rule, which God hath distributed to vs, a measure to reach euen vnto you.

14 For wee stretch not our selues beyond our measure, as though wee reached not vnto you, for we are come as farre as to you also, in preaching the Gospel of Christ.

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours, but hauing hope, when your faith is increased, that wee shall be || enlarged by you, according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the Gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans || line of things made ready to our hand.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For, not hee that commendeth himselfe is approued, but whom the Lord commendeth.

|| Or, vnderstand it no

|| Or, line.

|| Or, magnified in you

|| Or, rule,

* Ier. 9. 2. 1. cor. 1. 3

CHAP. XI.

1 Paul being enforced, entreth into a commendation of himselfe, 5 and comparison with the other Apostles.

WOuld to God you could beare with mee a little in my folly, and indeed || beare with me.

2 For I am ielous ouer you with godly ielousie, for I haue espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgine to Christ.

3 But I feare lest by any meanes, as the Serpent beguiled Eue through his subtilitie, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if hee that commeth, preacheth another Iesus whom we haue not preached, or if ye receiue another spirit, which ye haue not receiued, or another Gospel which ye haue not accepted, ye might well beare with him.

5 For, I suppose, I was not a whit behinde the very chiefest Apostles.

6 But though I bee rude in speech, yet not in knowledge: but wee haue beene throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence in abasing my selfe, that you might bee exalted, because I haue preached to you the Gospel of God freely:

8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them, to doe you seruice,

|| Or, you do beare with

9 And

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man, For that which was lacking to mee, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied. and in all things I haue kept my selfe from being burthensome to you, and so will I keepe my selfe.

10 As the trueth of Christ is in mee, no man shall † stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that I will doe, that I may cut off occasion from them that desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found euen as we.

13 For such are false Apostles, deceitfull workers, transforming themselues into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no marueile, for Sathan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousnesse, whose end shall be according to their workes.

16 I say againe, Let no man thinke me a foole, if otherwise, yet as a foole ‖ receiue me, that I may boast my selfe a little.

17 That which I speake, I speake it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For yee suffer fooles gladly, seeing yee your selues are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning reproch, as though we had been weake: howbeit, wherein soeuer any is bold, I speake foolishly, I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrewes? so am I: are they Israelites? so am I: are they the seed of Abraham? so am I.

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speake as a foole, I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I * fourty stripes saue one.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned: thrice I suffered shipwracke: a night and a day I haue beene in the deepe.

26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine owne countreymen, in perils

† Or, this boasting shall not be stopped in me.

‖ Or, suffer.

* Deut. 25. 3.

in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderneſſe, in perils in the ſea, in perils among falſe brethren,

27 In wearineſſe and paineſulneſſe, in watchings often, in hunger and thirſt, in faſtings often, in colde and nakedneſſe.

28 Beſides thoſe things that are without, that which commeth vpon me dayly, the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I muſt needs glory, I will glory of the things which concerne mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, which is bleſſed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damaſcus the gouernour vnder Aretas the King, kept the city with a garriſon, deſirous to apprehend me.

33 And through a window in a baſket was I let downe by the wall, and eſcaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 Hee commendeth his Apoſtleſhip not by his reuelations, 9 but by his infirmities: 11 Blaming them for forcing this boaſting.

IT is not expedient for mee doubtleſſe, to glory, I will come to viſions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Chriſt aboue foureteene yeeres agoe, whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth: ſuch a one, caught vp to the third heauen.

3 And I knew ſuch a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth.)

4 How that hee was caught vp into Paradiſe, and heard vnſpeakeable words, which it is not ‖ lawfull for a man to vtter.

‖ Or, poſſible.

5 Of ſuch a one will I glory, yet of my ſelfe I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would deſire to glory, I ſhall not be a foole: for I will ſay the trueth. But now I forbeare, leſt any man ſhould thinke of mee aboue that which hee ſeeth me to be, or that he heareth of me:

7 And leſt I ſhould be exalted aboue meaſure thorow the abundance of the reuelations, there was giuen to me a * thorne in the flеſh, the meſſenger of Satan to buffet me, leſt I ſhould be exalted aboue meaſure.

* See Ezek. 28. 24.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it
might depart from mee.
9 And he sais vnto mee, My grace is sufficient for
thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakenesse. Most
gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities,
that the power of Christ may rest vpon me.
10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in repro-
ches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for
Christs sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.
11 I am become a foole in glorying, ye haue compelled
mee. For I ought to haue been commended of you: for in
nothing am I behinde the very chiefest Apostles, though
I be nothing.
12 Truely the signes of an Apostle were wrought a-
mong you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and
mighty deeds.
13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other
Churches, except it be that I my selfe was not burthen-
some to you? forgiue me this wrong.
14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you,
and I will not bee burthensome to you; for I seeke not
yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for
the parents, but the parents for the children.
15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for †you:
though the more abundantly I loue you, the lesse I bee
loued.
16 But be it so: I did not burthen you: neuertheleſſe
being crafty, I caught you with guile.
17 Did I make againe of you by any of them, whom
I sent vnto you?
18 I desired Titus, And with him I sent a brother,
did Titus make a gaine of you? walked wee not in the
same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?
19 Againe, thinke you that wee excuse our selues vnto
you: wee speake before God in Christ: but wee doe all
things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.
20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not finde you
such as I would, and that I shall be found vnto you such
as ye would not, lest there bee debates, enuyings, wraths,
strikes, backebitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults.
21 And lest when I come againe, my God will hum-
ble me among you, and that I shall bewaile many which
haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vn-
cleannesse, and fornication, and lasciuiousnesse which they
haue committed.

CHAP.

† for your sake.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He threateneth obstinate sinners. 5 He aduiseth them to a tryall of their faith, 7 and to a reformation of their sinnes.

THis is the third time I am comming vnto you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall euery word bee established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore haue sinned, and to all other, that if I come againe, I will not spare:

3 Since yee seeke a proofe of Christ, speaking in me, which to youward is not weake, but is mighty in you.

4 For though hee was crucified through weakenesse, yet hee liueth by the power of God: for we also are weake ‖in him, but we shall liue with him by the power of God toward you.

‖Or, with him

5 Examine your selues whether yee bee in the faith: proue your owne selues. Know ye not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except yee be reprobates?

6 But I trust that yee shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God, that yee doe no euill: not that we should appeare approoued, but that yee should doe that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can doe nothing against the trueth, but for the trueth.

9 For wee are glad when we are weake, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, euen your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should vse sharpenesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the Saints salute you.

14 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, bee with you all. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippos, a citie of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

¶THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 He wondereth that they haue so soone left him and the Gospel, 11 which he learned not of men, but of God.

PAul an Apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you and peace, from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ,

4 Who gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that hee might deliuer vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God, and our Father,

5 To whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

6 I marueile, that you are so soone remooued from him, that called you into the grace of Christ, vnto another Gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though wee, or an Angel from heauen, preach any other Gospel vnto you, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach any other Gospel vnto you, then that yee haue receiued, let him be accursed.

10 For doe I now perswade men, or God? or doe I seeke to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the seruant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither receiued it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For yee haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in the Iewes religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Iewes religion, aboue many my †equals in mine owne nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace,

16 To reueale his Sonne in me, that I might preach him

Gr. equals yeeres.

him among the heathen, immediatly I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I vp to Hierusalem, to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned againe vnto Damascus.

18 Then after three yeeres, I || went vp to Hierusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes. || Or, retu

19 But other of the Apostles saw I none, saue James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold, before God I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia,

22 And was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Judea, which were in Christ,

23 But they had heard onely, that he which persecuted vs in times past, now preacheth the faith, which once hee destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee sheweth when he went againe to Hierusalem, and why, 14 Of iustification by faith, and not of workes. 20 They that are so iustified liue not in sinne.

Then fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Ierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus with me also.

2 And I went vp by reuelation, and communicated vnto them that Gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but || priuately to them which were of reputation, || Or, seue
lest by any meanes I should run, or had run in vaine.

3 But neither Titus, who was with mee, being a Greeke, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren vnawares brought in, who came in priuily to spie out our liberty, which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom wee gaue place by subiection, no not for an houre, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these who seemed to bee somwhat, (whatsoeuer they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to bee somwhat, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel of the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the

Gospel of the Circumcision was vnto Peter.

8 (For hee that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles.

9 And when Iames, Cephas and Iohn, who seemed to be pillars, perceiued the grace that was giuen vnto mee, they gaue to me and Barnabas the right handes of fellowship, that we should goe vnto the heathen, and they vnto the Circumcision.

10 Onely they would that wee should remember the poore, the same which I was also forward to doe.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he did eate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, hee withdrew, and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not vprightly according to the trueth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before them all, If thou being a Iew, liuest after the manner of the Gentiles, and not as doe the Iewes, why compellest thou the Gentiles to liue as doe the Iewes?

15 We who are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles;

16 Knowing that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen wee haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that wee might bee iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Law: for by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified.

17 But if while we seeke to be iustified by Christ, wee our selues also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid

18 For if I build againe the things which I destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through the Law, am dead to the Law, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Neuertheleſſe, I liue, yet not I, but Christ liueth in me, and the life which I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith of the Sonne of God, who loued me, and gaue himselfe for me.

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse come by the Law, then Christ is dead in vaine.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee asketh what mooued them to leaue the faith, and hang vpon the Law. 6 They that beleeue, are iustified, 9 and blessed with Abraham.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the trueth, before whose eyes Iesus Christ hath beene euidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This only would I learne of you, receiued ye the spirit by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? hauing begun in the Spirit, are yee now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue yee suffered || so many things in vaine? if it beeyet in vaine. ||Or, so g

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was || accounted vnto him for righteousnesse. ||Or, imp

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And ♄ Scripture foreseeing that God would iustifie the heathen through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, saying, * In thee shall all nations be blessed. *Gen. 12

9 So then they which bee of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Law, are vnder the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is euery one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the Law to doe them. *Deut. 2 26.

11 But that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight of God, it is euident: for * the iust shall liue by faith. *Abac. 2 rom. 1. 1

12 And the Law is not of faith: but * the man that doeth them, shall liue in them. *Leuit 1

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for vs: for it is written, * Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree: *Deut. 21

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles, through Iesus Christ, that we might receiue the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speake after the maner of men: though it be but a mans || couenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disanulleth, or addeth thereto. ||Or, testament.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not, And to seedes, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seede, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the couenant which was con-
firmed before of God in Christ, the law which was foure
hundred and thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanull, that it
should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance bee of the Law, it is no more
of promise: but God gaue it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then seruetb the Law? it was added be-
cause of transgressions, til the seede should come, to whom
the promise was made, and it was ordained by Angels in
the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one, but
God is one.

21 Is the Law then against the promises of God?
God forbid: for if there had beene a Law giuen which
could haue giuen life, verily righteousnesse should haue
beene by the Law.

22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne,
that the promise by faith of Iesus Christ might be giuen
to them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came, wee were kept vnder the
Law, shut vp vnto the faith, which should afterwards
bee reuealed.

24 Wherefore the Law was our Schoolemaster to
bring vs vnto Christ, that we might be iustified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, wee are no longer vn-
der a Schoolemaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ
Iesus.

27 For as many of you as haue beene baptized into
Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neither Iew nor Greeke, there is neither
bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are
all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seede,
and heires according to the promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Wee were vnder the Law till Christ came. 5 But Christ
freed vs. 22 Wee are the sonnes of Abraham by the free
woman.

NOw I say, that the heire, as long as hee is a childe,
differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be lord
of all,

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours vntill the time
appointed of the father.

3 Euen so wee, when wee were children, were in bon-
dage vnder the ‖ Elements of the world:

4 But

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent foorth his Sonne made of a woman, made vnder the Law,

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the Law, that we might receiue the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because yee are sonnes, God hath sent foorth the spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne, and if a sonne, then an heire of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when yee knew not God, ye did seruice vnto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that yee haue knowen God, or rather are knowen of God, how turne yee ‖ againe to the weake and beggerly ‖ elements, whereunto yee desire againe to be in bondage? ‖ Or, backe ‖ Or, rudiments.

10 Yee obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I haue bestowed vpon you labour in vaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, bee as I am; for I am as yee are, yee haue not iniured me at all.

13 Yee know how through infirmitie of the flesh, I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh yee despised not, nor reiected, but receiued mee as an Angel of God, euen as Christ Iesus.

15 ‖ Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, yee would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them to mee. ‖ Or, what was then?

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude ‖ you, that you might affect them. ‖ Or, vs.

18 But it is good to bee zealously affected alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you:

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voyce, for I ‖ stand in doubt of you. ‖ Or, I am perplexed for you.

21 Tell mee, yee that desire to be vnder the Law, doe yee not heare the Law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman.

23 But

23 But he who was of the bondwoman, was borne after the flesh: but he of the freewoman was by promise.

24 Which things are an Allegory; for these are the two || Couenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

Or, Testaments.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and || answereth to Ierusalem, which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

Or, is in the same ranke with.

26 But Ierusalem which is aboue is free, which is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written, * Reioyce thou barren that bearest not; breake forth and cry thou that trauailest not; for the desolate hath many moe children then she which hath an husband.

Esai 54.1.

28 Now wee, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then hee that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the spirit, euen so it is now.

30 Neuertheless, what sayth the Scripture? * Cast out the bondwoman and her sonne: for the sonne of the bondwoman shall not bee heire with the sonne of the freewoman.

Gen. 21.10.

31 So then, brethren, wee are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 Hee mooueth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to obserue circumcision: 13 but rather loue. 19 The works of the flesh. 22 The fruits of the Spirit.

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and bee not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if yee be circumcised, Christ shall profite you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to doe the whole Law.

4 Christ is become of none effect vnto you, whosoeuer of you are iustified by the Law: ye are fallen from grace.

5 For wee through the spirit waite for the hope of righteousnesse by faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ, neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Yee did runne well, || who did hinder you, that yee should not obey the truth?

|| Or, who did cause you to stay?

8 This

8 This perswasion commeth not of him that calleth you.
9 A little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe.
10 I haue confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall beare his iudgement, whosoeuer he bee.
11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the Crosse ceased.
12 I would they were euen cut off which trouble you.
13 For brethren, ye haue beene called vnto libertie, onely vse not libertie for an occasion to the flesh, but by loue serue one another.
14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, euen in this: *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Leuit. 19 matt. 22.
15 But if yee bite and deuoure one another, take heede ye be not consumed one of another.
16 This I say then, Walke in the Spirit, and ‖ yee shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. ‖Or, fulfil not.
17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot doe the things that ye would.
18 But if yee be led of the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Law.
19 Now the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, vncleannesse, lasciuiousnesse,
20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,
21 Enuyings, murthers, drunkennesse, reuellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I haue also tolde you in time past, that they which doe such things shall not inherite the kingdome of God.
22 But the fruit of the Spirit is loue, ioy, peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith,
23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.
24 And they that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh with the ‖ affections and lusts. ‖Or, passi
25 If we liue in the spirit, let vs also walke in ꝗ spirit.
26 Let vs not bee desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 He mooueth them to deale mildely with a brother that slippeth. 6 To be liberall to their teachers, 9 and not weary of well doing.

Brethren,

Or, although

BRethren, ‖ if a man bee ouertaken in a fault, yee which are spirituall, restore such a one in the spirit of meekenesse, considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Beare yee one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the Law of Christ.

3 For if a man thinke himselfe to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe.

4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, and then shall hee haue reioycing in himselfe alone, and not in another.

5 For euery man shall beare his owne burthen.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate vnto him that teacheth, in all good things.

7 Bee not deceiued, God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but hee that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting.

9 And let vs not bee weary in wel-doing: for in due season we shall reape if we faint not.

10 As wee haue therefore opportunity, let vs doe good vnto all men, especially vnto them, who are of the houshold of faith.

11 Yee see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to bee circumcised: onely lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselues who are circumcised, keepe the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory, saue in the Crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, ‖ by whom the world is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the world.

whereby.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auayleth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians, written from Rome.

¶ THE

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO THE Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

4 Of our election, 6 and adoption, 11 which is the fountaine of our saluation.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus.

2 Grace bee to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, who hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessings in heauenly || places in Christ:

4 According as hee hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should bee holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Hauing predestinated vs vnto the adoption of children by Iesus Christ to himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made vs accepted in the beloued:

7 In whom wee haue redemption through his blood, the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to the riches of his grace.

8 Wherein he hath abounded towards vs in all wisedome and prudence:

9 Hauing made known vnto vs the mysterie of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in himselfe,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, hee might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in † heauen, and which are on earth, euen in him:

11 In whom also wee haue obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will:

12 That we should bee to the prayse of his glory, who first || trusted in Christ.

13 In whom yee also trusted, after that ye heard the word of trueth, the Gospel of your saluation: in whom also

|| Or, things

† Gr. the heauens.

|| Or, hoped

also after that yee beleeued, ye were sealed with that holy spirit of promise.

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, vntill the redemption of the purchased possession vnto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the Saints,

16 Cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of glory, may giue vnto you the spirit of wisedome and reuelation || in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of your vnderstanding being enlightened: that yee may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the Saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to vs ward who beleeue, according to the working † of his mighty power:

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when hee raised him from the dead, and set him at his owne right hand in the heauenly places,

21 Farre aboue all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and euery name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things vnder his feete, and gaue him to be the head ouer all things to the Church,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 What we were 3 by nature, and what we are 5 by grace.
10 We are created vnto good workes.

AND you hath hee quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherein in time past yee walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the ayre, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom also wee all had our conuersation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the desires of the flesh, and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath euen as others:

4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead in sinnes, hath quickened vs together with Christ, (by grace ye are saued.)

6 And

y, for the knowledge-ne.

r. of the ght of his ver.

reake, the es.

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in heauenly places in Christ Iesus.
7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindnesse towards vs, through Christ Iesus.
8 For by grace are ye saued, through faith, and that not of your selues: it is the gift of God:
9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast.
10 For we are his workemanship, created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath before || ordeined that we should walke in them.
11 Wherefore remember that yee being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called vncircumcision by that which is called the vncircumcision in the flesh made by hands,
12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the common wealth of Israel, and strangers from the couenant of promise, hauing no hope, and without God in the world.
13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye who sometimes were farre off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition between vs:
15 Hauing abolished in his flesh the enmitie, euen the Law of Commandements conteined in Ordinances, for to make in himselfe, of twaine, one new man, so making peace.
16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by the crosse, hauing slaine the enmitie || thereby.
17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afarre off, to them that were nigh.
18 For through him wee both haue an accesse by one spirit vnto the Father.
19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but fellow citizens with the Saints, and of the houshold of God,
20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,
21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth to an holy Temple in the Lord:
22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

|| Or prepar.

|| Or, in himself.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saued:
8 This was Paul to preach.

For

FOr this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles,
2 If ye haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youward:
3 How that by reuelation he made knowen vnto mee the Mystery, (as I wrote † afore in few words,
4 Whereby when yee reade, yee may vnderstand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ.)
5 Which in other ages was not made knowen vnto the sonnes of men, as it is now reuealed vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,
6 That the Gentiles should bee fellow heires, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel:
7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee, by the effectuall working of his power.
8 Vnto mee who am lesse then the least of all Saints, is this grace giuen, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ,
9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mysterie, which from the beginning of the world, hath beene hid in God, who created all things by Iesus Christ:
10 To the intent that now vnto the principalities and powers in heauenly places, might bee knowen by the Church the manifold wisedome of God,
11 According to the eternall purpose which he purposed in Christ Iesus our Lord:
12 In whom wee haue boldnesse and access, with confidence by the faith of him.
13 Wherefore I desire that yee faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.
14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
15 Of whom the whole family in heauen and earth is named.
16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to bee strengthened with might, by his spirit in the inner man.
17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in loue,
18 May be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, length, and depth, and height:
19 And to know ‡ loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now

† a little afore.

20 Now vnto him that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 Vnto him be glory in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to vnitie, 24 to put on the new man, 25 to cast off lying, 29 and corrupt communication.

I Therefore the prisoner || of the Lord, beseech you, that yee walke worthy of the vocation wherewith yee are called,

|| Or, in the Lord.

2 With al lowlinesse, and meekenesse, with long suffering, forbearing one another in loue;

3 Endeauouring to keepe the vnitie of the spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body and one spirit, euen as yee are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God and Father of all, who is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith; * When he ascended vp on hie, he led || captiuitie captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men.

* Psal. 68.

|| Or, a multitude of captiues.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 Yee that descended is the same also that ascended vp farre aboue all heauens, that hee might || fill all things.)

|| Or, fulfill.

11 * And hee gaue some, Apostles: and some Prophets: and some, Euangelists: and some, Pastours, and teachers;

* 1 Cor. 12.

12 For the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the Ministery, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come || in the vnitie of the Faith, and of the knowledge of the Sonne of God vnto a perfect man, vnto the measure of the || stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

|| Or, into the vnitie.

|| Or, age.

14 That wee henceforth bee no more children tossed to and fro, and carried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinesse, whereby they lie in wait to deceiue:

15 But || speaking the trueth in loue, may grow vp into him in all things, which is the head, euen Christ:

16 * From whom the whole body fitly ioyned together and compacted by that which euery ioynt sup-

according to the effectuall working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that yee henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke in the vanitie of their minde,

18 Hauing the vnderstanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the * || blindnesse of their heart:

om 1.21. r, hardnes.

19 Who being past feeling, haue giuen themselues ouer vnto lasciuiousnesse, to worke all vncleannesse with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that yee haue heard him, and haue beene taught by him, as the truth is in Iesus,

22 That ye put off concerning the former conuersation, the olde man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde:

24 And that ye put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousnesse and || true holinesse.

r, holinesse ruth.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speake euery man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry and sinne not, let not the Sunne goe downe vpon your wrath:

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole steale no more: but rather let him labour working with his handes the thing that is good, that he may haue || to giue to him that needeth.

r, to distribute.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouth, but that which is good || to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace to the hearers.

r, to edifie ositably.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed to the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and euill speaking, bee put away from you, with all malice.

, Cor. 2.10

32 * And be ye kinde one to another, tender hearted, forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christs sake hath forgiuen you.

CHAP. V.

He exhorteth to loue, 3 to flee fornication, 4 and vncleannesse, 15 to walke warily, 22 The duties of wiues, 25 d of husbands.

BEe yee therefore followers of God, as deare children.
2 And walke in loue, as Christ alse hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling sauour.
3 But fornication and all vncleannesse, or couetousnesse, let it not bee once named, among you, as becommeth Saints.
4 Neither filthinesse, nor foolish talking, nor iesting, which are not contentent: but rather giuing of thankes.
5 For this yee know, that no whoremonger, nor vncleane person, nor couetous man who is an idolater hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.
6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for because of these things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of || disobedience. || Or, vnbelief.
7 Be ye not therefore partakers with them.
8 For yee were sometimes darkenesse, but now are yee light in the Lord: walke as children of light.
9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse and trueth)
10 Proouing what is acceptable vnto the Lord.
11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull works of darkenesse but rather reprooue them,
12 For it is a shame euen to speake of those things which are done of them in secret.
13 But all things that are || reprooued, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoeuer doth make manifest, is light. || Or. discovered.
14 Wherefore hee saith: *Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light. *Esay 6
15 *See then that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise, *Col. 4.
16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are euill.
17 Wherefore bee yee not vnwise, but vnderstanding what the will of the Lord is.
18 And bee not drunke with wine, wherein is excesse: but be filled with the Spirit,
19 Speaking to your selues in Psalmes and Hymnes and spiritual songs, singing, and making melodie in your heart to the Lord,
20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, and the Father, in the Name of the Lord Iesus Christ,
21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.
22 Wiues submit your selues vnto your owne husbands, as vnto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, euen as Christ is the head of the Church: and he is the Sauiour of the bodie.

24 Therefore as the Church is subiect vnto Christ, so let the wiues be to their owne husbands in euerything.

25 Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ also loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it.

26 That hee might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word.

27 That hee might present it to himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrincle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh: but nourisheth & cherisheth it, euen as the Lord the Church:

30 For wee are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shal a man leaue his father and mother, and shall be ioyned vnto his wife and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speake concerning Christ and the Church.

33 Neuertheleſſe, let euery one of you in particular, so loue his wife euen as himselfe, and the wife see that shee reuerence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The dueties of children, 5 of seruants. 10 Our life is a warfare. 13 The Christans armour.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promise.)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest liue long on the earth.

4 And ye fathers prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Seruants bee obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as vnto Christ:

6 Not with eye-seruice as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ doing the will of God from the heart:

7 With good will doing seruice, as to the Lord, and not to men.

8 Knowing that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth

doeth, the same shall hee receiue of the Lord, whether hee bee bond or free.

9 And yee masters, doe the same things vnto them, ‖ forbearing threatning: knowing that ‖ your Master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, bee strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that yee may bee able to stand against the wiles of the deuill.

12 For wee wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkenesse of this world, against ‖ spirituall wickednesse in ‖ high places.

13 Wherefore take vnto you the whole armour of God, that yee may bee able to withstand in the euill day, and ‖ hauing done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, hauing your loynes girt about with trueth, & hauing on the breastplate of righteousnes:

15 And your feete shodde with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 Aboue all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith yee shall be able to quench all the fierie darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the ‖ word of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseuerance, and supplication for all Saints,

19 And for mee, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make knowen the mystery of the Gospel:

20 For which I am an Ambassadour ‖ in bonds, that ‖ therein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.

21 But that yee may also know my affaires, and how I doe, Tychicus a beloued brother, and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make knowen vnto you all things.

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace bee to the brethren, and loue, with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Grace bee with all them that loue our Lord Iesus Christ ‖ in sincerity. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

‖ Or, moderating.

‖ Some read both your and their Master.

‖ Or, wicked spirits.

‖ Or, hauing done.

‖ Or, hauing ouercome all.

‖ Or, in a chaine.

‖ Or, therein.

‖ Or, with incorruption.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO THE Philippians.

CHAP. I.

3 Pauls thankefulnesse to God for them, 9 and his prayers for them. 12 The fruit of Pauls troubles. 21 His readinesse to suffer.

PAul and Timotheus the seruants of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus, which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:

2 Grace bee vnto you, & peace from God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God vpon euery || remembrance of you,

4 Alwayes in euery prayer of mine for you all, making request, with ioy

5 For your fellowship in the Gospel, from the first day vntill now;

6 Being confident in this very thing, that hee which hath begun a good worke in you, || will perfoorme it vntill the day of Iesus Christ:

7 Euen as it is meete for me to thinke this of you all, because I || haue you in my heart, in almuch as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the Gospel, ye all are || partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all || indgement.

10 That ye may || approue things that || are excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ.

11 Being filled with the fruites of righteousnesse, which are by Iesus Christ, vnto the glory and prayse of God.

12 But I would yee should vnderstand, brethren, that the things which happened vnto mee, haue fallen out rather vnto the furtherance of the Gospel.

13 So that my bonds || in Christ, are manifest in all the || palace, and in || all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speake the word without feare.

15 Some

mention.
will finish.
you haue in your heart.
partakers with me grace.
sence.
try.
differ.
fit
first.
Cesars
to all
rs.

15 Some indeede preach Christ, euen of enuie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? Notwithstanding euery way, whether in pretence, or in truth: Christ is preached, and I therein doe reioyce, yea, and will reioyce.

19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and the supply of the spirit of Iesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shal be ashamed: but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to liue is Christ, and to die is gaine.

22 But if I liue in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall chuse, I wote not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ, which is farre better.

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needfull for you.

25 And hauing this confidence, I know that I shall abide, and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioy of faith,

26 That your reioycing may be more abundant in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Onely let your conuersation bee as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else bee absent, I may heare of your affaires, that yee stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striuing together for the faith of the Gospel,

28 And in nothing terrified by your aduersaries, which is to them an euident token of perdition: but to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen in the behalfe of Christ not onely to beleeue on him: but also to suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same conflict which ye saw in mee, and now heare to bee in me.

CHAP. II.

2 Hee exhorteth to vnity and humility: 12 and to a carefull proceeding in the way of saluation.

IF there bee therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the spirit, if any bowels, and mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, of one minde.
3 Let nothing bee done through strife, or vaine glory, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteeme other better then themselues.
4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man also on the things of others.
5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Iesus:
6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it not robbery to be equall with God:
7 But made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke vpon him the forme of a seruant, and was made in the ‖ likenesse of men.
8 And being found in fashion as a man, hee humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto death, euen the death of the crosse.
9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name which is aboue euery name;
10 That at the Name of Iesus euery knee should bow, of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth:
11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.
12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; worke out your owne saluation with feare, and trembling.
13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will, and to doe of his good pleasure.
14 Doe all things without murmurings, and disputings:
15 That yee may bee blamelesse and ‖ harmelesse, the sonnes of God without rebuke, in the mids of a crooked and peruerse nation, among whom ‖ yee shine as lights in the world:
16 Holding foorth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not run in vaine, neither laboured in vaine.
17 Yea, and if I bee † offered vpon the sacrifice and seruice of your faith, I ioy, and reioyce with you all.
18 For the same cause also doe yee ioy, and reioyce with mee.
19 ‖ But I trust in the Lord Iesus to send Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may bee of good comfort, when I know your state.

bite.
ere.
ne ye.
red
re-

20 For

20 For I haue no man || like minded, who will naturally care for your state.
21 For all seeke their owne, not the things which are Iesus Christs.
22 But yee know the proofe of him, That as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.
23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soone as I shall see how it will goe with me.
24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.
25 Yet I suppose it necessary, to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and hee that ministred to my wants.
26 For hee longed after you all, and was full of heauinesse, because that ye had heard that he had beene sicke.
27 For indeede he was sicke nigh vnto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on mee also, lest I should haue sorrow vpon sorrow.
28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him againe, ye may reioyce, and that I may bee the lesse sorrowfull.
29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and || hold such in reputation:
30 Because for the worke of Christ he was nigh vnto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lacke of seruice toward me.

|| Or, so dear vnto me.

|| Or, honour such.

CHAP. III.

2 He warneth them of false teachers. 15 He exhorteth them 17 to imitate him, 18 and to decline the wayes of carnall Christians.

FInally, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeede is not grieuous: but for you it is safe.
2 Beware of dogs, beware of euill workers: beware of the concision.
3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh.
4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath wherof he might trust in the flesh, I more:
5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stocke of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes, as touching the Law, a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeale, persecuting the Church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, blamelesse.
7 But what things were gaine to mee, those I counted losse for Christ.
8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse for the excellencie of the knowledge of Christ Iesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and doe count them but dung, that I may winne Christ,
9 And bee found in him, not having mine owne righteousnes, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:
10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable vnto his death,
11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.
12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Iesus.
13 Brethren, I count not my selfe to have apprehended: but this one thing I doe, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth vnto those things which are before,
14 I presse toward the marke, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus.
15 Let vs therefore, as many as bee perfect, bee thus minded: and if in any thing yee bee otherwise minded, God shall reveale even this vnto you.
16 Neuertheleſſe, whereto wee have already attained, let vs walke by the same rule, let vs minde the same thing.
17 Brethren, bee followers together of me, and marke them which walke so, as ye have vs for an ensample.
18 (For many walke, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the crosse of Christ:
19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is their shame, who minde earthly things.)
20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we looke for the Saviour, the Lord Iesus Christ:
21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may bee fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working whereby hee is able even to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

4 Generall exhortations. 10 His ioy for their liberality toward him, and Gods grace in them.

THerefore, my brethren, dearely beloued and longed for, my ioy and crowne, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearely beloued.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreate thee also, true yoke-fellow, helpe those women which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the booke of life.

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway: and againe I say, Reioyce.

5 Let your moderation bee knowen vnto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Bee carefull for nothing: but in euery thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiuing, let your request be made knowen vnto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall keepe your hearts and mindes through Christ Iesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer things are ‖ honest, whatsoeuer things are iust, whatsoeuer things are pure, whatsoeuer things are louely, whatsoeuer things are of good report: if there bee any vertue, and if there bee any prayse, thinke on these things: ‖ Or, venerable.

9 Those things which yee haue both learned and receiued, and heard, and seene in mee, doe: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I reioyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of mee ‖ hath flourished againe, wherein yee were also carefull, but yee lacked opportunity. ‖ Or, is renewed.

11 Not that I speake in respect of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer estate I am, therewith to bee content.

12 I know both how to bee abased, and I know how to abound: euery where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungry, both to abound, and to suffer neede.

13 I can doe all things through Christ, which strengthneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, yee haue well done that yee did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now yee Philippians know also, that in the beginning

beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, as concerning giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, yee sent once, and againe vnto my necessitie.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit, that may abound to your account.

18 But || I haue all, and abound, I am full, hauing receiued of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweete smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

I haue had all.

19 But my God shall supply all your neede, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Iesus.

20 Now vnto God and our Father bee glory for euer and euer. Amen.

21 Salute euery Saint in Christ Iesus: the brethren which are with me, greete you.

22 All the Saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars houshold.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL the Apostle to the Colossians.

CHAP I.

3 Hee thanketh God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their increase in grace: 14 And describeth the true Christ vnto them.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To the Saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Wee giue thankes to God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, praying alwayes for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of the loue which ye haue to all the Saints,

5 For the hope which is layd vp for you in heauen, whereof yee heard before in the word of the trueth of the Gospel.

6 Which is come vnto you as it is in all the world, and

and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day yee heard of it, and knew the grace of God in trueth.

7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow seruant, who is for you a faithfull Minister of Christ:

8 Who also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.

9 For this cause wee also, since the day wee heard it, doe not cease to pray for you, and to desire that yee might bee filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisedom and spirituall vnderstanding:

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord vnto all pleasing, being fruitfull in euery good worke, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, vnto all patience and long suffering with ioyfulnesse:

12 Giuing thanks vnto the Father, which hath made vs meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light:

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darknesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of † his deare Sonne, †Gr. the S of his loue

14 In whom we haue redemption through his blood, euen the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of euery creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heauen, and that are in earth, visible & inuisible, whether they bee thrones or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 *And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. *1. Cor. 8 iohn 1. 3.

18 And hee is the head of the bodie, the Church: who is the beginning, the first borne from the dead: that ‖ in all things he might haue the preeminence. ‖Or, am all.

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell.

20 And (‖ hauing made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things vnto himselfe, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth or things in heauen. ‖Or, make peace.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies ‖ in your mind by wicked workes, yet now hath hee reconciled, ‖Or, by y mind in w kedworks

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and vnblameable, & vnreproueable in his sight,

23 If

23 If yee continue in the faith grounded and settled, and bee not mooued away from the hope of the Gospel, which yee haue heard, and which was preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made a minister:

24 Who now reioyce in my sufferings for you, and fill vp that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am made a Minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen to mee for you, || to fulfill the word of God:

26 Euen the mysterie which hath bene hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his Saints,

27 To whom God would make knowen what is the riches of the glory of this mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ || in you, the hope of Glory:

28 Whom we preach, warning euery man, and teaching euery man in all wisedome, that we may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus.

29 Wherunto I also labour, striuing according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee exhorteth them to bee constant in Christ: 8 to beware of Philosophie and vaine traditions, 18 worshipping of angels, 20 and legall ceremonies.

FOr I would that yee knew what great || conflict I haue for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my face in the flesh:

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in loue, and vnto all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding to the knowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ,

3 || In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome, and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, ioyning and beholding your order, and the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As yee haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke ye in him:

7 Rooted and built vp in him, and stablished in the faith, as yee haue bene taught, abounding therein with thanksgiuing.

8 Beware

r, fully to each the ord of God, om. 1. 19.

r, among

r, feare, or e.

, Wherein

8 Beware lest any man spoile you through Philosophie and vaine deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ‖rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:

‖Or, elements

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And yee are compleat in him, which is the head of all principality, and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the Circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sinnes of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sinnes, and the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath hee quickned together with him, hauing forgiuen you all trespasses.

14 Blotting out the hand writing of ordinances, that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, and tooke it out of the way, nayling it to his Crosse.

15 And hauing spoyled principalities and powers, hee made a shew of them openly, tryumphing ouer them ‖in it.

‖Or, in himself.

16 Let no man therefore iudge you in ‖ meate, or in drink, or in ‖ respect of an holy day, or of the New moone, or of the Sabbath dayes:

‖Or, for eating and drinking.

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man ‖ beguile you of your reward, † in a voluntary humilitie, and worshipping of Angels, intruding into those things which hee hath not seene, vainely puft vp by his fleshly minde:

‖Or, in pa
‖Or, iudge against you
†Or being a voluntary in humility

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by ioynts and bands hauing nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore, if yee bee dead with Christ from the ‖ rudiments of the world: why, as though liuing in the world, are ye subiect to ordinances?

‖Or, elements

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the vsing) after the commandements and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue indeede a shew of wisedome in will worship and humility, and ‖ neglecting of the bodie, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

‖Or, pinching or not sparing.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee sheweth where we should seeke Christ. 5 He exhorteth to mortification. 10 to put off the olde man, and put on Christ, 12 and to sundry other duties.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which
are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of
God:
Or, minde. 2 Set your ‖affection on things aboue, not on things
on the earth.
3 For yee are dead, and your life is hid with Christ
in God.
4 When Christ who is our life, shall appeare, then shal
ye also appeare with him in glory.
5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vp-
on the earth: fornication, vncleannesse, inordinate af-
fection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse, which is
idolatry:
6 For which things sake, the wrath of God commeth
on the children of disobedience.
7 In the which yee also walked sometimes, when ye
liued in them.
8 But now you also, put off all these, anger, wrath
malice, blasphemie, filthy communication out of your
mouth.
9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yee haue put off
the old man with his deeds:
10 And hauing put on the new man, which is renew-
ed in knowledge, after the image of him that crea-
ted him,
11 Where there is neither Greeke, nor Iew, circumci-
sion, nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, nor
free: but Christ is all, and in all.
12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and be-
loued) bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of mind
meekenesse, long suffering,
13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one ano-
ther, if any man haue a ‖quarell against any: euen as
Christ forgaue you, so also doe yee.
14 And aboue all these things put on charitie, which
is the bond of perfectnesse.
15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts to the
which also yee are called in one body: and bee yee thanke-
full.
16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all
wisedome, teaching and admonishing one another in
Psalmes and Hymnes, and spiritual songs, singing with
grace in your hearts to the Lord.
17 And whatsoeuer yee doe in word or deed, doe all in
the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God,
and the Father by him.

18 Wiues

18 Wiues, submit your selues vnto your owne husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands loue your wiues, and bee not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers prouoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Seruants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh: not with eye-seruice, as men-pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart feating God.

23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not vnto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But hee that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong which hee hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to feruencie in prayer, 5 and to walke wisely towards them that doe not yet know Christ.

MAsters, giue vnto your seruants that which is iust and equall, knowing that ye also haue a Master in heauen.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiuing:

3 Withall, praying also for vs, that God would open vnto vs a doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speake.

5 Walke in wisedome towards them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how yee ought to answere euery man.

7 All my estate shall Tychicus declare vnto you, who is a beloued brother, and a faithfull minister and fellow seruant in the Lord.

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that hee might know your estate, and comfort your hearts.

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloued brother, who is one of you: they shall make knowen vnto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas, (touching whom ye receiued commandements: if hee come vnto you, receiue him.)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, who are of the Circumcision: These onely are my fellow workers vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene a comfort vnto mee.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you a seruant of Christ, saluteth you, alwayes || labouring feruently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and || compleat in all the will of God.

Or, striuing.
Or, filled.

13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great zeale for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloued Phicitian, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nimphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read among you, cause that it be also read in the Church of the Laodiceans, and that ye likewise read the Epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heede to the ministerie, which thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE to the Tessalonians.

CHAP. I.

1 Hee sheweth his mindfulnesse of them in thanksgiuing and prayer, 5 and his perswasion of their sincere faith and conuersion.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue thankes to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers.

3 Remem

3 Remembring without ceasing your worke of faith, and labour of loue, and patience of hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren, || beloued, your election of God.

|| Or, beloued of God your election.

5 For our Gospel came not vnto you in word onely: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what maner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, hauing receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that yee were ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in euery place your faith to Godward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speake any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of vs, what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God,

10 And to waite for his Sonne from heauen, whom he raised from the dead, euen Iesus which deliuered vs from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 How the Gospel was preached vnto them, and how they receiued it. 18 Why he was so long absent and why hee desired to see them.

FOr your selues, brethren, know our entrance in vnto you, that it was not in vaine.

2 But euen after that wee had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of vncleannesse, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to bee put in trust with the Gospel, euen so we speake, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time vsed wee flattering words, as yee know, nor a cloake of couetousnesse, God is witnesse:

6 Nor of men sought wee glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when wee might haue beene || burthensome as the Apostles of Christ.

|| Or, vsed authority.

7 But wee were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:
8 So being affectionately desirous of you, wee were willing to haue imparted vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our owne soules, because yee were deare vnto vs.
9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and trauaile: for labouring night and day, because wee would not bee chargeable vnto any of you, wee preached vnto you the Gospel of God.
10 Yee are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and iustly, and vnblameably wee behaued our selues among you that beleeue.
11 As you know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged euery one of you, (as a father doth his children,)
12 That yee would walke worthy of God who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory.
13 For this cause also thanke we God, without ceasing because when ye receiued the word of God, which ye heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeue.
14 For ye brethren, became followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus: for yee also haue suffered like things of your owne countrey men, euen as they haue of the Iewes:
15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus, and their owne Prophets, and haue || persecuted vs: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:
16 Forbidding vs to speake to the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fill vp their sins alway: for the wrath is come vpon them to the vttermost.
17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeauoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.
18 Wherefore we would haue come vnto you (euen I Paul) once and againe: but Satan hindered vs.
19 For what is our hope, or ioy, or crowne of || reioycing? Are not euen yee in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his comming?
20 For ye are our glory and ioy.

Or, chased out.

Or, glorying

CHAP. III.

1 Of Pauls sending of Timothie vnto them. 7 His ioy for them. 10 His desire to see them.

WHerefore when we could no longer forbeare, wee thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the Gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you, concerning your faith:
3 That no man should be moued by these afflictions: for your selues know that we are appointed thereunto.
4 For verely when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation, euen as it came to passe, and ye know.
5 For this cause when I could no longer forbeare, I sent to know your faith, lest by some meanes the tempter haue tempted you, and our labour be in vaine.
6 But now when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and charitie, and that yee haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring greatly to see vs, as we also to see you:
7 Therefore, brethren, wee were comforted ouer you in all our affliction and distresse, by your faith:
8 For now we * liue, if ye stand fast in the Lord. * Rom. 7
9 For what thankes can we render to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith we ioy for your sakes before our God,
10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?
11 Now God himselfe and our Father, and our Lord Iesus Christ || direct our way vnto you. || Or, guide
12 And the Lord make you to increase, and abound in loue one towards another, and towards all men, euen as we doe towards you:
13 To the end hee may establish your hearts vnblameable in holinesse before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to goe on in godlinesse, 6 to holinesse, 9 to loue, 11 to quietnesse, 13 to moderate sorrow for the dead. 17 Of the resurrection and last iudgement.

FArthermore then we || beseech you, brethren, and || exhort you by the Lord Iesus, that as ye haue receiued of vs, how yee ought to walke, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more. || Or, requ || Or, beso
2 For ye know what commandements we gaue you, by the Lord Iesus.
3 For this is the will of God, euen your sanctification, that ye should abstaine from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to possesse his vessell in sanctification and honour.

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That no man goe beyond and || defraud his brother || in any matter, because that the Lord is the auenger of all such; as we also haue forewarned you, and testified:

7 For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto holinesse.

8 He therefore that || despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also giuen vnto vs his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, yee neede not that I write vnto you: for yee your selues are taught of God to loue one another.

10 And indeede yee doe it toward all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but wee beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to doe your owne business, and to worke with your owne handes, (as wee commanded you:)

12 That yee may walke honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may haue lacke of || nothing.

13 But I would not haue you to bee ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorrow not, euen as others which haue no hope,

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus died, and rose againe: euen so them also which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say vnto you by the word of the Lord, That wee which are aliue and remaine vnto the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which are asleepe.

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen with a shout, with the voyce of the Archangel, and with the trumpe of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

17 Then we which are aliue, and remaine, shall bee caught vp together with them in the clouds, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, || comfort one another with these wordes.

r, oppresse, ouerreach.
r, in the ter.
r, reiecteth
, of no
exhort.

CHAP. V.

1 He sheweth of Christs second comming to iudgement, 16 and giueth diuers precepts: 23 and so concludeth.

BUt of the times and the seasons, brethren, yee haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For your selues know perfectly that the day of the Lord so commeth as a thiefe in the night.
3 For when they shall say, Peace and safetie: then sudden destruction commeth vpon them, as trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.
4 But yee, brethren, are not in darkenesse, that that day should ouertake you as a thiefe.
5 Yee are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkenesse.
6 Therefore let vs not sleepe, as doe others: but let vs watch and be sober.
7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.
8 But let vs, who are of the day, bee sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and loue, and for an helmet, the hope of saluation.
9 For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but to obtaine saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ.
10 Who dyed for vs, that whether wee wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him.
11 Wherefore ‖ comfort your selues together, and edifie one another, euen as also ye doe. ‖Or, ex
12 And we beseech you brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you:
13 And to esteeme them very highly in loue for their workes sake, and be at peace among your selues.
14 Now wee ‖ exhort you, brethren, warne them that are ‖ vnruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weake; be patient toward all men. ‖Or, be ‖Or, d d.rly.
15 See that none render euill for euill vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good, both among your selues, and to all men.
16 Reioyce euermore:
17 Pray without ceasing:
18 In euery thing giue thankes: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus concerning you.
19 Quench not the Spirit:
20 Despise not prophecyings:
21 Proue all things: hold fast that which is good.
22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.
23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and I pray God, your whole spirit, and soule, and body bee preserued blamelesse vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.
24 Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will doe it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.
26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I ‖ charge you by the Lord, that this Epistle bee read vnto all the holy brethren.
28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

1 He sheweth his good opinion of their faith, loue, and patience, 6 and comforteth them against persecution.

PAVL and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ:
2 Grace vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 We are bound to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charitie of euery one of you all towards each other aboundeth.
4 So that wee our selues glory in you in the Churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.
5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may bee counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer;
6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you:
7 And to you who are troubled, rest with vs, when the Lord Iesus shall be reuealed from heauen, † with his mighty Angels,
8 In flaming fire, ‖ taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ,
9 Who shall be punished with euerlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;
10 When hee shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to bee admired in all them that beleeue (because our testimony

dlure.
he An-
his
elding.

testimony among you was beleeued) in that day.

11 Wherefore also wee pray alwayes for you, that our God would || count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the worke of faith, with power:

|| Or, vouch safe.

12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may bee glorified in you, and yee in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee exhorteth them to continue stedfast, 3 sheweth them there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and a discouery of Antichrist before the day of the Lord.

NOw we beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our gathering together vnto him,

2 That yee bee not soone shaken in minde, or bee troubled neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from vs, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes, for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sinne be reuealed, the sonne of perdition,

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himselfe aboue all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that hee as God sitteth in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that hee is God.

5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things?

6 And now yee know what || withholdeth that hee might bee reuealed in his time.

|| Or, holdeth

7 For the mystery of iniquity doeth already worke: onely he who now letteth, will let, vntill he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked bee reuealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comming.

9 Euen him, whose comming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceiueablenesse of vnrighteousnesse in them that perish; because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue a lye:

12 That they all might bee damned who beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.

13 But wee are bound to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, because God hath

from

from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and beleefe of the truth,

14 Whereunto hee called you by our Gospel to the obtaining of the glory of the Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which yee haue beene taught, whether by word or our Epistle.

16 Now our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe, and God euen our Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and worke.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee craueth their prayers, 3 testifieth his confidence of them, 5 prayeth for them, 6 and giueth them diuers precepts.

FInally, brethren, pray for vs, that the word of the Lord † may haue free course, and bee glorified euen as it is with you:

† Gr. may run.

2 And that we may be deliuered from † vnreasonable and wicked men: for all men haue not faith.

† Gr. absurd.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And we haue confidence in the Lord touching you, that you both doe, and will doe the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the loue of God, and into || the patient waiting for Christ.

|| Gr. the patience of Christ.

6 Now wee command you brethren in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he receiued of vs.

7 For your selues know how yee ought to follow vs: for we behaued not our selues disorderly among you.

8 Neither did wee eate any mans bread for nought: but wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because wee haue not power, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when we were with you, this wee commanded you, that if any would not worke, neither should he eate.

11 For wee heare that there are some which walke among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busibodies.

12 Now

12 Now them that are such, we command and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that with quietnesse they worke, and eate their owne bread.

13 But ye brethren, ‖ be not weare in well doing, ‖ Or, faint not.

14 And if any man obey not our word, by this Epistle ‖ note that man, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed: ‖ Or, signify that man by an Epistle.

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himselfe, giue you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls charge to Timothie. 5 The end of the Law. 11 Of Pauls calling. 20 Of Hymeneus and Alexander.

Aul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the commaundement of God our Sauiour, and Lord Iesus Christ which is our hope,

2 Unto Timothie my owne sonne in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, & Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither giue heede to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying which is in faith: so doe.

5 Now the ende of the Commandement is charitie, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From which some ‖ hauing swarued, haue turned aside vnto vaine iangling, ‖ Or, not minding.

7 Desiring to bee teachers of the Law, vnderstanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme.

8 But

8 But we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully:

9 Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the vngodly, and for sinners, for vnholy and prophane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselues with mankinde, for men-stealers, for lyars, for periured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thanke Christ Iesus our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministery,

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and iniurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in vnbelieife.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abound-dant, with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, That Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe.

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in mee first, Iesus Christ might shew forth all long suffering, for a patterne to them which should hereafter beleeue on him, to life euerlasting.

17 Now vnto the King eternall, immortall, inuisible, the onely wise God, bee honour & glory for euer and euer. Amen.

18 This charge I commit vnto thee, sonne Timothie, according to the prophecies, which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare,

19 Holding faith and a good conscience, which some hauing put away, cõcerning faith, haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they may learne not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 It is meete to pray and giue thankes for all men. 9 Womens attire. 12 They are not permitted to teach.

I || Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giuing of thankes be made for all men:

|| desire, || eminent

2 For Kings, and for all that are in || authoritie, that wee

wee may leade a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and honesty.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour,

4 Who will haue all men to be saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and men, the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all, || to be testified in due time.

|| Or, a testimonie.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a Preacher, and an Apostle (I speake the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that men pray euery where, lifting vp holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorne themselues in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobriety, not with || broided haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly array,

|| Or, plaited.

10 But (which becommeth women professing godlinesse) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection:

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to vsurpe authority ouer the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eue.

14 And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman being deceiued, was in the transgression:

15 Notwithstanding, shee shall be saued in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charitie, and holinesse with sobriete.

CHAP. III.

1 Of Bishops and Deacons, and their wiues. 15 Of the Church, and the trueth therein taught and professed.

THis is a true saying; If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good worke.

2 A Bishop then must bee blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, || of good behaiour, giuen to hospitality, apt to teach:

|| Or, modest.

3 Not || giuen to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not couetous:

|| Or, not ready to quarrel and offer wrong, or in wine.

4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauing his children in subiection with all gravity.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his owne house, how shall he take care of the Church of God?)

|| Or, one lately come to the faith.

6 Not a || nouice, least being lifted vp with pride, hee fall into the condemnation of the deuill.

7 More-

7 Moreouer, hee must haue a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproch, and the snare of the deuill.

8 Likewise must the Deacons bee graue, not double tongued, not giuen to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre.

9 Holding the mysterie of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proued, then let them vse the office of a Deacon, being found blamelesse.

11 Euen so must their wiues be graue, not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the Deacons bee the husband of one wife, ruling their children, and their owne houses well.

13 For they that || haue vsed the office of a Deacon well, purchase to themselues a good degree, and great boldnesse in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, hoping to come vnto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the House of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and || ground of the trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of Godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, receiued vp into glory.

CHAP. IIII.

1 That in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 Paul giueth diuers precepts to Timothie.

NOw the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giuing heede to seducing spirits, and doctrines of deuils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, hauing their conscience seared with a hote yron.

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstaine from meates, which God hath created to bee receiued with thanksgiuing of them which beleeue and know the trueth.

4 For euery creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be receiued with thanksgiuing:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt bee a good minister of Iesus Christ, nourished vp in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But

mini-

stay.

7 But refuse prophane and olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe rather vnto Godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth || little, but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, hauing promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

|| Or, for a little time.

9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation:

10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the liuing God, who is the Sauiour of all men, especially of those that beleeue.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the beleeuers, in word, in conuersation in charitie, in spirit, in faith, in puritie.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophesie, with the laying on of the hands of the Presbytery.

15 Meditate vpon these things, giue thy selfe wholly to them, that thy profiting may appeare || to all.

|| Or, in all things.

16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, and vnto the doctrine: continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

Rules to bee obserued in reproouing. 3 Of widowes. 17 Of Elders.

REbuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father, and the yonger men as brethren:

2 The Elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters with all puritie.

3 Honour widowes that are widowes indeed.

4 But if any widowe haue children or nephewes, let them learne first to shew || pietie at home, and to requite their parents: for this is good and acceptable before God.

|| Or, kindne

5 Now shee that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liueth || in pleasure, is dead while shee liueth.

|| Or, delicately.

7 And these things giue in charge, that they may bee blamelesse.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne, and specially for those of his owne || house, hee hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidell.

|| Or, kindre

9 Let

Or, chosen.

9 Let not a widdow be || taken into the number vnder threescore yeeres olde, hauing beene the wife of one man,

10 Well reported of for good workes, if shee haue brought vp children, if she haue lodged strangers, if shee haue washed the Saints feete, if she haue reliueed the afflicted, if she haue diligently followed euery good worke.

11 But the younger widowes refuse: for when they haue begunne to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry,

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue cast off their first faith.

13 And with all they learne to be idle, wandring about from house to house: and not onely idle, but tatlers also, and busibodies, speaking things which they ought not.

13 I will therefore that the younger women marry, beare children, guide the house, giue none occasion to the aduersary † to speake reprochfully.

Gr. for their ling.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that beleeueth, haue widowes, let them relieue them, and let not the Church be charged, that it may relieue them that are widowes indeede.

17 Let the Elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, * Thou shalt not muzzle the ore that treadeth out the corne: and, * The labourer is worthy of his reward.

Deut. 25. 4
Mat. 10. 10

19 Against an Elder receiue not an accusation, but || before two or three witnesses.

Or, vnder.

20 Them that sinne, rebuke before all, that others also may feare.

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things || without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

Or, without iudice.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomackes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open beforehand, going before to iudgement: and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes of some are manifest beforehand, and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 Seruants duties. 3 Auoid newfangled teachers. 6 The gaine of godlinesse, and euill of couetousnesse.

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their owne masters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise them because they are brethren: but rather doe them seruice, because they are ‖ faithfull and beloued, partakers of the benefite: these things teach and exhort.

‖ Or, beleeuing.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome wordes, euen the wordes of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse:

4 Hee is ‖ proude, knowing nothing, but ‖ doting about questions, and strifes of words, whereof commeth enuie, strife, raylings, euill surmises,

‖ Or, a fool. ‖ Or, sicke.

5 ‖ Peruerse disputings of men of corrupt mindes, and destitute of the trueth, supposing that gaine is godlinesse: from such withdraw thy selfe.

‖ Gr, galling one of another.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gaine.

7 For wee brought nothing into this world, and it is certaine we can cary nothing out.

8 And hauing foode and rayment, let vs be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which drowne men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the loue of money is the roote of all euill, which while some coueted after, they haue ‖ erred from the faith, and pierced themselues thorow with many sorrowes.

‖ Or, beene seduced.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I giue thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Iesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good ‖ confession;

‖ Or, profession.

14 That thou keepe this commandement without spot, vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Which in his times hee shall shew, who is the bles-

ced and onely Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords:

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light, which no man can approch vnto, whom no man hath seene, nor can see: to whom bee honour and power euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in † vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God, who giueth vs richly all things to enioy.

18 That they doe good, that they bee rich in good workes, ready to distribute, || willing to communicate,

19 Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay holde on eternall life.

20 O Timothie, keepe that which is committed to thy trust, auoyding profane and vaine babblings, and oppositions of science, falsely so called.

21 Which some professing, haue erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

† Gr. vncertaintie of riches.

|| Gr. sociable.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Pauls loue to Timothie, and Timothies faith. 6 Paul giueth him diuers exhortations. 15 Of Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 Of Onesiphorus.

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timothie my dearely beloued sonne: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 I thanke God, whom I serue from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy teares, that I may be fulled with ioy,

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grãdmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice: and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Where

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not giuen vs the spirit of feare, but of power, of loue, and of a sound minde.

8 Bee not thou therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lord, nor of mee his prisoner, but bee thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen vs in Christ Iesus, before the world began;

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie to light, through the Gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; neuertheless, I am not ashamed, for I know whom I haue ‖ beleeued, and I am perswaded that hee is able to keepe that which I haue committed vnto him against that day. ‖ Or, trust

13 Holde fast the forme of sound words, which thou hast heard of mee, in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That good thing which was committed vnto thee, keepe, by the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they that are in Asia bee turned away from mee, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercy vnto the house of Onesiphorus, for hee oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine:

17 But when he was in Rome, hee sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that he may finde mercy of the Lord in that day: And in how many things he ministred vnto mee at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 Timothie is exhorted to constancie perseuerence, and to shew himselfe approoued. 7 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 24 How the Lords seruant ought to behaue himselfe.

THou therefore, my sonne, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me ‖among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

‖, by.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier,

5 And if a man also striue for masteries, yet is he not crowned except he striue lawfully.

6 ‖ The husbandman that laboureth, must bee first partaker of the fruits.

‖, the husbandman labouring first, must be partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ of the seed of Dauid was raised from the dead, according to my Gospel:

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto bonds: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the Elects sakes, that they may also obtaine the saluation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glory.

11 It is a faithfull saying: for if wee be dead with him, we shall also liue with him.

12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne with him, if we deny him, he also will deny vs.

13 If we beleeue not, yet he abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himselfe.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they striue not about wordes to no profit, but to the subuerting of the hearers.

15 Study to shew thy selfe approoued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to bee ashamed, rightly diuiding the word of trueth.

16 But shun prophane and vaine babblings, for they will increase vnto more vngodlinesse.

17 And their word will eate as doeth a ‖ canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.

‖, gangrene

18 Who concerning the trueth haue erred, saying that the resurrection is past already, and ouerthrow the faith of some.

19 Neuertheleſſe, the foundation of God standeth ‖ sure, hauing this Seale, the Lord knoweth them that are his. And let euery one that nameth the Name of Christ depart from iniquity.

‖, steady.

20 But in a great house, there are not onely vessels of gold,

gold, and of siluer, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, hee shall bee a vessell vnto honour, sanctified and meet for the Masters vse, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flee also youthfull lustes: but follow righteousnesse, faith, charitie, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions auoyd, knowing that they doe gender strifes.

24 And the seruant of the Lord must not striue: but be gentle: vnto all men, apt to teach, || patient,

25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose themselues, if God peraduenture will giue them repentance to the acknowledging of the trueth.

26 And that they may † recouer themselues out of the snare of the deuill, who are † taken captiue by him at his will.

|| Or, forbearing.

† Gr. awa

† Gr. tak alive.

CHAP. III.

1 Of the last dayes. 6 The enemies of the trueth are described 10 Pauls example propounded. 16 The Scriptures commended.

THis know also, that in the last dayes perillous times shall come.

2 For men shall bee louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents vnthankefull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers, || false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

|| Or, make bates.

4 Traitors, headie, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: from such turne away.

6 For of this sort are they, which creepe into houses, and leade captiue silly women laden with sinnes, ledde away with diuers lustes.

7 Euer learning, and neuer able to come to the knowledge of the trueth.

8 Now as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so doe these also resist the trueth: men of corrupt mindes, || reprobate concerning the faith.

|| Or, of no iudgement.

9 But they shall proceede no further: for their folly shall be manifest vnto all men, as theirs also was.

|| Or, thou hast beene a diligent follower of.

10 But || thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of life, purpose, faith, long suffering, charity, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions which came vnto mee at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But euill men and seducers shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast beene assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them.

15 And that from a childe thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation, through faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 All Scripture is giuen by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproofe, for correction, for instruction in righteousnesse,

perfecte 17 That the man of God may bee perfect, ‖ throughly furnished vnto all good workes.

CHAP IIII.

1 Pauls exhortation to Timothie. 6 The neerenesse of Pauls death 9 Paul willeth him to come to him.

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, who shall iudge the quicke and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reproue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their owne lusts shall they heape to themselues teachers, hauing itching eares:

4 And they shall turne away their eares from the trueth, and shall be turned vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the worke of an Euangelist, ‖ make full proofe of thy ministerie.

, fulfill.

6 For I am now ready to bee offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my course, I haue kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is layde vp for mee a crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous Iudge shall giue me at that day: and not to mee onely, but vnto them also that loue his appearing.

9 Doe thy diligence to come shortly vnto mee:

10 For Demas hath forsaken mee, hauing loued this

present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with mee. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou commest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the Coppersmith did me much euill, the Lord reward him according to his workes.

15 Of whom bee thou ware also, for hee hath greatly withstood ‖ our words.

‖ Or, our preaching

16 At my first answere no man stood with mee, but all men forsooke mee: I pray God that it may not bee laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with mee, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might bee fully knowen, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer mee from euery euill worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome, to whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

19 Salute Priscа and Aquila, and the houshold of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ bee with thy spirit. Grace bee with you. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle vnto Timotheus, ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to TITVS.

CHAP. I.

1 Why Titus was left in Crete. 6 How Ministers should bee qualified. 11 Of euill teachers.

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods Elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth which is after godlinesse,

for. 2 || In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began:

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed vnto me, according to the Commandement of God our Sauiour:

4 To Titus mine owne sonne after the common faith, Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

left vn- 5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldst set in order the things that || are wanting, and ordaine Elders in euery city, as I had appointed thee.

6 If any bee blameless, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, not accused of ryot, or vnruly.

7 For a Bishop must bee blameless, as the Steward
Tim. 3.6. of God: not selfe-willed, not soone angry, not * giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre,

good 8 But a louer of hospitality, a louer of || good men, sober, iust, holy, temperate,

in tea- 9 Holding fast the faithfull word, || as he hath beene taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort, and to conuince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many vnruly and vaine talkers, and deceiuers, specially they of the Circumcision.

11 Whose mouthes must bee stopped, who subuert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, euen a prophet of their owne, said: The Cretians are alway lyars, euill beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharpely, that they may be sound in the faith:

14 Not giuing heede to Iewish fables, and commandements of men that turne from the trueth.

15 Vnto the pure all things are pure, but vnto them that

that are defiled & vnbeleeuing, is nothing pure: but euen their minde and conscience is defiled.

16 They professe that they know God; but in workes they denie him, being abominable, and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke || reprobate.

|| Or, void of judgement.

CHAP. II.

1 Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 The duety of seruants, and generally of all Christians.

BVt speake thou the things which become sound doctrine,

2 That the aged men bee || sober, graue, temperate, sound in faith, in charitie, in pattence.

|| Or, vigilant.

3 The aged women likewise, that they bee in behaviour as becommeth || holinesse, not || false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things,

|| Or, holy men. || Or, makebates.

4 That they may teach the yong women to be || sober, to loue their husbands, to loue their children.

|| Or, wise.

5 To bee discreete, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their owne husbands, that the word of God bee not blasphemed.

6 Yong men likewise exhort, to be || sober minded.

|| Or, discreet.

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a paterne of good workes, in doctrine shewing vncorruptnesse, grauitie, sincerite,

8 Sound speach that cannot bee condemned, that hee that is of the contrary part, may bee ashamed, hauing no euill thing to say of vou.

6 Exhort seruants to be obedient vnto their owne masters, and to please them well in all things, || not answering againe:

|| Or, gainesaying.

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things.

11 For the grace of God || that bringeth saluation, hath appeared to all men,

|| Or, that bringeth saluation to all men hath appeared.

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodlinesse and worldly lusts, wee should liue soberly, righteously and godly in this present world,

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquity, and purifie vnto himselfe a peculiar people, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is further directed what to teach, and what not. 10 To reiect obstinate heretikes, and appoynted by Paul to come vnto him.

PUt them in minde to be subiect to principalities and powers, to obey Magistrates, to bee ready to every good worke,

2 To speake euill of no man, to bee no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.

3 For we our selues also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts and pleasures, liuing in malice and enuy, hatefull, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ‖ loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousnes which we haue done, but according to his mercy he saued vs, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which hee shed on vs † abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauiour:

7 That being iustified by his grace, wee should bee made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly, that they which haue beleeued in God, might be carefull to maintaine good workes: these things are good and profitable vnto men.

9 But auoyde foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and striuings about the Law: for they are vnprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and second admonition, reiect:

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is subuerted, and sinneth, being condemned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come vnto me to Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, and Apollos on their iourney diligently, that nothing bee wanting vnto them.

14 And let ours also learne to ‖ maintaine good works for necessary vses, that they bee not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me, salute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace bee with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

¶ THE

r, pitie.

r, richly.

r, professe
est trades.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to Philemon.

4 Pauls ioy for Philemons faith and loue. 9 He desireth him to forgiue Onesimus, and to receiue him againe,

PAul a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and Timothie our brother, vnto Philemon our dearely beloued, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to our brother Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy loue, and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saints:

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Iesus.

7 For wee haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because the bowels of the Saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore though I might be much bold in Christ, to enioyne thee that which is conuenient:

9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Iesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with me, that in thy stead he might haue ministred vnto me in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy mind would I doe nothing, that thy benefit should not bee as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer:

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, a brother beloued, specially to mee, but how much more vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord.

17 If

17 If thou count mee therefore a partner, receiue him as my selfe.

18 If hee hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul haue written it with mine owne hand, I will repay it: albeit I doe not say to thee, how thou owest vnto me, euen thine owne selfe besides.

20 Yea brother, let mee haue ioy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Hauing confidence in thy obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt also doe more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be giuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus:

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a seruant.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL the Apostle to the Hebrewes.

CHAP. I.

1. Christ in these last times comming to vs from the Father,
4 is preferred aboue the Angels.

GOd who at sundry times, and in diuers maners spake in time past vnto the Fathers by the Prophets.

2 Hath in these last dayes spoken vnto vs by his Sonne, whom hee hath appointed heire of all things, by whom also hee made the worldes,

Isd.7.26 3 *Who being the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and vpholding all things by the word of his power, when hee had by himselfe purged our sinnes, sate downe on the right hand of the Maiestie on high,

4 Being made so much better then the Angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said hee at any time, Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee?

And

And againe, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Sonne.

6 And againe, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, hee saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.

7 And of the Angels he saith; Who maketh his Angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But vnto the Sonne hee sayth, Thy Throne, O God, is for euer and euer: a Scepter of †righteousnesse is the Scepter of thy Kingdome.

†Gr. rightnesse, or straightness

9 Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie, therefore God, euen thy God hath anoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

10 And, *thou Lord in the beginning hast layde the foundation of the earth: and the heauens are the workes of thine hands.

*Psal. 102. esai. 34.4.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall waxe old as doeth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile.

13 But to which of the Angels sayde hee at any time, *Sit on my right hand, vntill I make thine enemies thy footestoole?

*Psal. 110. Mat. 22.44.

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent foorth to minister for them, who shall be heires of saluation?

CHAP. II.

1 Wee must bee obedient to Christ. 5 because hee tooke our nature, 14 as it was necessary he should.

THerefore wee ought to giue the more earnest heede to the things which we haue heard, lest at any time we should †let them slip.

†Gr. run as leaking vessels.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, and euery transgression and disobedience receiued a iust recompence of reward:

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, ‖ and gifes of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

‖ Or, distributions.

5 For vnto the Angels hath hee not put in subiection the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying, *What is man, that thou art mindfull of him: or the sonne of man, that thou visitest him?

*Psal. 8.4.

7 Thou

7 Thou madest him a || little lower then the Angels, thou crownedst him with glory an honour, and didst set him ouer the workes of thy hands.

8 Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete. For in that hee put all in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that is not put vnder him. But now wee see not yet all things put vnder him.

9 But wee see Iesus, who was made a little lower then the Angels, || for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that hee by the grace of God should taste death for euery man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sonnes vnto glory, to make the Captaine of their saluation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise vnto thee.

13 And againe, * I will put my trust in him: and againe, * Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part of the same, that through death hee might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the deuill:

15 And deliuer them, who through feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For verely hee † tooke not on him the nature of Angels: but hee tooke on him the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behooued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might bee a mercifull and faithful high Priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that hee himselfe hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses, 7 therefore we are the more bounden to beleeue in him.

WHerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly calling, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession, Christ Iesus.

2 Who

*, a little le inferior to.

r, by.

Psal 12.2. Isay 8. 18.

r. hee tooke not hold Angels, but he seede of Abraham hee tooke holde.

2 Who was faithfull to him that † appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house. †Gr. made, 1.Sam.12.
3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as hee who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.
4 For euery house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.
5 And Moses verely was faithfull in all his house as a seruant for a testimonie of those things which were to be spoken after.
6 But Christ as a Sonne ouer his owne house, whose house are wee, if wee hold fast the confidence, and the reioycing of the hope firme vnto the end.
7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if yee will heare his voyce, *Psal.95.7
8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:
9 When your fathers tempted mee, prooued mee, and saw my workes fourtie yeeres.
10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and said, They doe alway erre in their hearts, and they haue not knowen my wayes.
11 So I sware in my wrath: † They shall not enter into my rest. †Gr. if they shall enter.
12 Take heede, brethren, lest there be in any of you an euill heart of vnbelieke, in departing from the liuing God.
13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called, To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.
14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if wee hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast vnto the end.
15 Whilest it is said, To day if ye will heare his voyce harden not your hearts as in the prouocation.
16 For some when they had heard, did prouoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.
17 But with whom was hee grieued fourtie yeeres? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carkeises fell in the wildernesse?
18 And to whom sware hee that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleeued not?
19 So wee see that they could not enter in, because of vnbelieke.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The Christians rest is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word 14 By our high Priest Iesus, 16 we may goe boldly to the throne of grace.

Let

LEt vs therefore feare, lest a promise being left vs, of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to come short of it.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached, as well as vnto them: but † the word preached did not profit them, || not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleeued, doe enter into rest, as he said, As I haue sworne in my wrath, if they shal enter into my rest, although the workes were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For hee spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise: And God did rest the seuenth day from all his workes.

5 And in this place againe: If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom || it was first preached, entred not in because of vnbelieke:

7 Againe, hee limitteth a certaine day, saying in Dauid, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

8 For if || Iesus had giuen them rest, then would hee not afterward haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a || rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hee also hath ceased from his owne workes, as God did from his.

11 Let vs labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of || vnbelieke.

12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull, and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing euen to the diuiding asunder of soule and spirit, and of the ioynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and opened vnto the eyes of him with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great high Priest, that is passed into the heauens, Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs hold fast our profession.

15 For wee haue not an high Priest which cannot bee touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne of grace, that wee may obtaine mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP.

Gr. the word hearing.

Gr. because they were not mixed by faith to.

Gr. the Gospel was first preached.

That is, Dauid.

Gr. keeping a Sabbath.

Gr. disobedience.

CHAP. V.

1 The authoritie and honour of Christs Priesthood. 11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproued.

FOr euery high Priest taken from among men, is ordeined for men, in things perteining to God, that hee may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes.

2 Who ‖ can haue compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that hee himselfe also is compassed with infirmity.

‖ *Or, can reasonably bear with.*

3 And by reason hereof hee ought as for the people, so also for himselfe to offer for sinnes.

4 And no man taketh this honour to himselfe, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himselfe, to bee made an high Priest; but hee that said vnto him, Thou art my Sonne, to day haue I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec,

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when hee had offered vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was heard, ‖ in that he feared.

‖ *Or, for his pietie.*

8 Though he were a Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered.

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him,

10 Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchisedec:

11 Of whom we haue many things to say, and hard to be vttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time yee ought to bee teachers, yee haue neede that one teach you againe which bee the first principles of the Oracles of God, and are become such as haue need of milke, and not of strong meate.

† *Gr. hath no experience.*

13 For euery one that vseth milke, † is vnskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.

‖ *Or, perfect.*

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are ‖ of full age, euen those who by reason ‖ of vse haue their senses exercised to discerne both good and euill.

‖ *Or, of an habite or perfection.*

CHAP. VI.

1 Hee exhorteth not to fall backe from the faith, 11 but to be stedfast, 12 to waite vpon God, 13 who is sure of his promise.

THerefore leauing the ‖ principles of the doctrine of Christ, let vs goe on vnto perfection, not laying a-

‖ *Or, the word of the beginning of Christ.*

gaine the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of Baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And haue tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them againe vnto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselues the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them ‖ by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing from God.

Or, for.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briers, is reiected, & is nigh vnto cursing, whose end is to bee burned.

9 But beloued wee are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany saluation, though wee thus speake.

10 For God is not vnrighteous, to forget your worke and labour of loue, which yee haue shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred to the Saints, and doe minister.

11 And wee desire that euery one of you doe shewe the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end:

12 That yee bee not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherite the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could sweare by no greater, he sware by himselfe,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing I will blesse thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verely sweare by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise the immutabilitie of his counsell, † confirmed it by an oath:

† Gr. interposed himselfe by an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might haue a strong consolation, who haue fled for refuge to lay hold vpon the hope set before vs.

19 Which

19 Which hope wee haue as an anker of the soule both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vaile,

20 Whither the fore-runner is for vs entred; euen Iesus, made an high Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec: 11 farre aboue the Priests of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec King of Salem, Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also King of Salem, which is, king of peace.

3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like vnto the Sonne of God, abideth a Priest continually.

† Or, without pedigree.

4 Now consider how great this man was, vnto whom euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tenth of the spoyles.

5 And verely they that are of the sonnes of Leui, who receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a commandement to take tithes of the people according to the Law, that is of their brethren, though they come out of the loynes of Abraham:

6 But hee whose ‖ descent is not counted from them, receiued tithes from Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

‖ Or, pedigree.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And heere men that die receiue tithes: but there hee receiueth them, of whom it is witnessed, that hee liueth.

9 And as I may so say, Leui also who receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For hee was yet in the loynes of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leuiticall Priesthood (for vnder it the people receiued the Law) what further need was there that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron.

12 For the Priesthood being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the Law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the Altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lord sprang out of Iuda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet farre more euident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest,

16 Who is made not after the Law of a carnall commandement, but after the power of an endlesse life.

17 For he testifieth: Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verely a disannulling of the commandement, going before, for the weakenesse and vnprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For the Law made nothing perfect, ‖but the bringing in of a better hope did: by the which wee draw nigh vnto God.

20 And inasmuch as not without an oath he was made Priest:

21 (For those Priests were made ‖without an oath but this with an oath, by him that said vnto him, * The Lord sware, and will not repent, thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec)

22 By so much was Iesus made a surety of a better Testament.

23 And they truely were many Priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.

24 But this man because he continueth euer, hath an ‖vnchangeable Priesthood.

25 Wherefore hee is able also to saue them: to the vttermost, that come vnto God by him, seeing he euer liueth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high Priest became vs, who is holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens.

27 Who needeth not dayly, as those high Priestes, to offer vp sacrifice, first for his owne sinnes, & then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered vp himselfe.

28 For the Law maketh men high Priests, which haue infirmitie, but the word of the oath which was since the Law, maketh the Sonne, who is † consecrate for euermore.

r, but it the ging in.

r, without ring of ath. al.110.4.

r, which eth not n one to ther. r, euer-e.

Gr. per-fed.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

1 By Christs eternall Priesthood, the Leuiticall Priesthood is abolished. 7 And the temporall couenant, by the eternall Couenant.

NOw of the things which wee haue spoken, this is the summe: wee haue such an high Priest, who is set on the right hand of the Throne of the Maiestie in the heauens:

2 A minister ‖ of the Sanctuary and of the true Tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

‖ Or, of h things.

3 For euery high Priest is ordeined to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, hee should not bee a Priest, seeing that ‖ there are Priests that offer gifts according to the Law:

‖ Or, they Priests.

5 Who serue vnto the example and shadow of heauenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when hee was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the patterne shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath hee obteined a more excellent ministery, by how much also hee is the Mediatour of a better ‖ Couenant, which was established vpon better promises.

‖ Or, Testament.

7 For if that first Couenant had beene faultlesse, then should no place haue beene sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, hee saith, Behold, the dayes come (sayeth the Lord) when I will make a new Couenant with the house of Israel, & the house of Iudah.

9 Not according to the Couenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand to leade them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my Couenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the Couenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes, sayth the Lord: I will † put my Lawes into their minde, and write them ‖ in their hearts: and I will bee to them a God, and they shall bee to me a people.

* Iere. 31.
† Gr. give
‖ Or, vpon

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will bee merciful to their vnrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new Couenant, he hath made the

first olde. Now that which decayeth and waxeth olde, is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 The rites and bloody sacrifices of the Law, 11 farre inferiour to the blood and sacrifice of Christ.

THen verily the first Couenant had also || ordinances of diuine seruice, and a worldly Sanctuary.

Or, ceremonies.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first, wherein was the Candlestick, and the Table, and the Shewbread, which is called || the Sanctuary.

Or, holy.

3 And after the second vaile, the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden Censor, and the Arke of the Couenant ouerlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had Manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the tables of the Couenant.

5 And ouer it the Cherubims of glory shadowing the Mercy-seate; of which wee cannot now speake particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priests went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, accomplishing the seruice of God.

7 But into the second went the high Priest alone once euery yeere, not without blood, which hee offered for himselfe, and for the errors of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the seruice perfect, as pertaining to the conscience.

10 Which stood onely in meates & drinkes, and diuers washings, and || carnall ordinances imposed on them vntill the time of reformation.

Or, rites, or ceremonies.

11 But Christ, being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building:

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood hee entred in once into the Holy place, hauing obtained eternall redemption for vs.

13 For if the blood of Buls & of Goates, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the vncleane, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who
through the eternall Spirit, offered himselfe without
|| spot to God, purge your conscience from dead workes, to || Or, fauls.
serue the liuing God?

15 And for this cause hee is the Mediatour of the new
Testament, that by meanes of death, for the redemption
of the transgressions that were vnder the first Testament
they which are called, might receiue the promise of eter-
nall inheritance.

16 For where a Testament is, there must also of ne-
cessitie || be the death of the Testatour. || Or, bee

17 For a Testament is of force after men are dead:
otherwise it is of no strength at all whilest the Testatour
liueth. brought in

18 Whereupon, neither the first Testament was || dedi-
cated without blood. || Or, purij

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all
the people according to the Law, hee tooke the blood of
calues and of goates, with water and || scarlet wooll, and || Or, purp
hyssope, and sprinkled both the booke and all the people,

20 Saying, This is the blood of the Testament
which God hath enioyned vnto you.

21 Moreouer, hee sprinkled with blood both the Ta-
bernacle, and all the vessels of the Ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with
blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patternes of
things in the heauens should bee purified with these, but
the heauenly things themselues with better sacrifices
then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made
with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into
heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the presence of God
for vs.

25 Nor yet that hee should offer himselfe often, as the
high Priest entreth into the Holy place, euery yeere with
blood of others:

26 For then must hee often haue suffered since the
foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the
world, hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice
of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, but
after this the Judgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sinnes of
many, and vnto them that looke for him shall hee appeare
the second time without sinne, vnto saluation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakenesse of the sacrifices of the Law, 10 and power of Christs Sacrifice. 16 An exhortation to faith and patience.

FOr the Law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices which they offered yeere by yeere continually, make the commers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not haue ceased to bee offered, because that the worshippers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance againe made of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of Buls and of Goates, should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when hee commeth into the world, hee saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou || prepared me:

|| thou hast fitted me.

6 In burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sinne thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then sayd I, Loe, I come, (In the volume of the booke it is written of me) to doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue when hee said, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offerings, and offering for sinne thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the Law.

9 Then sayd hee, Loe, I come to doe thy will, (O God:) Hee taketh away the first, that hee may establish the second.

10 By the which will wee are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Iesus Christ once for all.

11 And euery Priest standeth dayly ministring and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can neuer take away sinnes.

12 But this man after hee had offered one sacrifice for sinnes for euer, sate downe on the right hand of God,

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies bee made his footestoole.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for euer them that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to vs, for after that he had said before,

16 This is the Couenant that I will make with
Ier. 31. 33. them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will * put my Lawes into their hearts, and in their mindes will I write them:

17 And

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.
18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sinne.
19 Having therefore, brethren, ‖ boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Iesus,
20 By a new and liuing way which hee hath ‖ consecrated for vs, through the vaile, that is to say, his flesh:
21 And hauing an high Priest ouer the house of God:
22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in full assurance of faith, hauing our hearts sprinkled from an euill conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.
23 Let vs hold fast the profession of our faith without wauering, (for he is faithfull that promised.)
24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes:
25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selues together, as the maner of some is: but exhorting one another, and somuch the more, as ye see the day approching.
26 For if wee sinne wilfully after that wee haue received the knowledge of the truth, there remayneth no more sacrifice for sinnes,
27 But a certaine fearefull looking for of iudgement, and fiery indignation, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.
28 He that despised Moses Law, died without mercy, vnder two or three witnesses.
29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose yee, shall hee bee thought worthy, who hath troden vnder foote the Sonne of God, and hath counted the blood of the Couenant wherewith hee was sanctified, an vnholy thing, and hath done despite vnto the Spirit of grace?
30 For wee know him that hath said, * Vengeance belongeth vnto me, I will recompence, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.
31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God.
32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in which after yee were illuminated, yee endured a great fight of afflictions:
33 Partly whilest yee were made a gazing stocke both by reproches and afflictions, and partly whilest ye became companions of them that were so vsed.
34 For yee had compassion of me in my bonds, & tooke ioyfully ♄ spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues that ye haue in heauen a better & an enduring substance.

‖ Or, liberty.
‖ Or, new made.
*Deu. 32. rom. 12. 1.

35 Cast

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For yee haue neede of patience, that after yee haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and hee that shall come, will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if any man draw backe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.

39 But wee are not of them who draw backe vnto perdition: but of them that beleeue, to the sauing of the soule.

CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is; 6 without it we cannot please God. 7 The fruits thereof in the fathers of old.

NOw faith is the || substance of things hoped for, the euidence of things not seene.

|| ground, confidence.

2 For by it the Elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we vnderstand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seene, were not made of things which doe appeare.

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a more excellent sacrifice then Kain, by which hee obtained witnesse that hee was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, || yet speaketh.

|| or, is yet seen of.

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death and was not found, because God had translated him: For before his translation hee had this testimony, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is vnpossible to please him: for hee that commeth to God, must beleeue that hee is, and that hee is a rewarder of them that diligently seeke him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seene as yet, || moued with feare, prepared an Arke to the sauing of his house, by the which hee condemned the world, and became heire of the righteousnesse which is by faith.

|| or, being afraid.

8 By faith Abraham when hee was called to goe out into a place which hee should after receiue for an inheritance, obeyed, and hee went out, not knowing whither hee went.

9 By faith hee sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange countrey, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heires with him of the same promise,

10 For hee looked for a citie which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through

11 Through faith also Sara her selfe receiued strength to conceiue seede, and was delivered of a childe when shee was past age, because shee iudged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there euen of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the Sea shore innumerable.

13 These all dyed † in faith, not having receiued the promises, but having seene them afarre off, and were perswaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrimes on the earth.

† Gr. according to faith.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainely that they seeke a countrey.

15 And truely if they had beene mindfull of that countrey, from whence they came out, they might haue had opportunity to haue returned:

16 But now they desire a better countrey, that is, an heauenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

17 By faith Abraham when hee was tried, offered vp Isaac: and hee that had receiued the promises, offered vp his onely begotten sonne,

18 ‖ Of whom it was said, That, in Isaac shall thy seede bee called:

‖ Or, To.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him vp, euen from the dead: from whence also hee receiued him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Iacob when hee was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and worshipped leaning vpon the top of his staffe.

22 By faith Ioseph when he dyed, ‖ made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gaue commandement concerning his bones.

‖ Or, remembred.

23 By faith Moses when hee was borne, was hidde three moneths of his parents, because they saw hee was a proper childe, and they not afraid of the kings commandement.

24 By faith Moses when hee was come to yeeres, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter:

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season:

26 Esteeming the reproch ‖ of Christ greater riches then

‖ Or. for Christ.

then the treasures in Egypt: for hee had respect vnto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the King: for hee endured, as seeing him who is inuisible.

28 Through faith hee kept the Passeouer, and the sprinkling of blood, lest hee that destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the red Sea, as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to doe, were drowned.

30 By faith the walles of Jericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them || that beleeued not, when shee had receiued the spies with peace.

Or, that are disobedient.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would faile mee to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Sampson, and of Jephthah, of Dauid also and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obteined promises, stopped the mouthes of Lyons,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword: out of weakenesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women receiued their dead rayled to life againe: and others were *tortured, not accepting deliuerance, that they might obteine a better resurrection.

Iac. 7. 7.

36 And others had tryall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreouer, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, were sawen asunder, were tempted, were slaine with the sword: they wandred about in sheepe skinnes, and goat skinnes, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandred in desarts, and in mountaines, and in dennes and caues of the earth.

39 And these all hauing obteined a good report thorough faith, receiued not the promise:

40 God hauing || prouided some better thing for vs, that they without vs, should not be made perfect.

foreseene

CHAP. XII

1 Ad exhortation to faith, patience, and godlinesse. 22. A commendation of the new Testament aboue the old.

Where-

Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloude of witnesses, let vs lay aside euery weight, and the sinne that doeth so easily beset vs, and let vs runne with patience the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the ‖ Authour and finisher of our faith, who for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, despising the shame, & is set downe at the right hand of the throne of God.

‖ Or, beginner.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himselfe, lest ye be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood striuing against sinne.

5 And yee haue forgotten the exhortation which speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth he chasteneth, and scourgeth euery sonne whom he receiueth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sonnes: for what sonne is hee whom the Father chasteneth not?

8 But if yee be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, wee haue had fathers of our flesh, which corrected vs, and wee gaue them reuerence: shall wee not much rather bee in subiection vnto the Father of Spirits and liue?

10 For they verely for a few dayes chastened vs after their owne pleasure, but he for our profit, that wee might be partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to bee ioyous, but grieuous: neuertheleſſe, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousnesse, vnto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift vp the handes which hang downe, and the feeble knees,

13 And make ‖ straight pathes for your feet, lest that which is lame bee turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

‖ Or, euen.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man ‖ faile of the grace of God, lest any root of bitternesse springing vp, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.

‖ Or, fall from.

16 Lest

16 Lest there bee any fornicatour, or prophane person, as Esaw, who for one morsell of meate solde his birthright.

17 For yee know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, he was reiected: for he found no ‖ place of repentance, though hee sought it carefully with teares.

Or, way to change his minde.

18 For ye are not come vnto the mount that might bee touched, and that burned with fire, nor vnto blackenesse, and darkenesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voyce of wordes, which voyce they that heard entreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more.

20 For they could not endure that which was commanded: And if so much as a beast touch the mountaine, it shall be stoned, or thrust thorow with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses sayd, I exceedingly feare and quake.

22 But ye are come vnto mount Sion, and vnto the citie of the liuing God the heauenly Ierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels:

23 To the generall assembly, and Church of the first borne which are ‖ written in heauen, and to God the Iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust men made perfect:

Or, inrolled

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the new ‖ Couenant and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

Or, testament.

25 See that yee refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth; much more shall not wee escape if wee turne away from him that speaketh from heauen.

26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heauen.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the remoueing of those things that ‖ are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot bee shaken may remaine.

Or, may bee shaken

28 Wherefore wee receiuing a Kingdome which cannot bee moued, ‖ let vs haue grace, whereby we may serue God, acceptably, with reuerence and godly feare.

Or, let vs hold fast.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

Di uers admonitions to charitie and other godly vertues 20
The conclusion of the Epistle.

Let

LEt brotherly loue continue.
2 Bee not forgetfull to entertaine strangers; for thereby some haue entertained Angels vnawares.
3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer aduersitie, as being your selues also in the body.
4 Mariage is honourable in all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers, and adulterers God will iudge.
5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnes: and be content with such things as yee haue. For he hath said, *I will neuer leaue thee, nor forsake thee. *Iosh. 1. 5.
6 So that wee may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not feare what man shall doe vnto me.
7 Remember them which ‖ haue the rule ouer you: who haue spoken vnto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conuersation. ‖Or, are the guides.
8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for euer.
9 Bee not caried about with diuers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart bee established with grace, not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue beene occupyed therein.
10 We haue an altar, whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue the Tabernacle.
11 For the bodies of those beastes whose blood is brought into the Sanctuary by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe.
12 Wherefore Iesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.
13 Let vs goe forth therefore vnto him without the campe, bearing his reproach.
14 * For here haue we no continuing city, but we seeke one to come. * Mich. 2.
15 By him therefore let vs offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, † giuing thankes to his Name: †Gr. confessing to.
16 But to doe good and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.
17 Obey them that ‖ haue the rule ouer you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue account, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you. ‖Or, guides.
18 Pray for vs; for wee trust wee haue a good conscience in all things, willing to liue honestly.
19 But I beseech you the rather to doe this, that I may bee restored to you the sooner

20 Now

20 Now the God of peace, that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, that great Shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting || Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in euery good worke to doe his will, || working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom bee glory for euer and euer. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I haue written a letter vnto you in few words.

23 Know ye, that our brother Timothie is set at liberte, with whom, if he come shortly I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the rule ouer you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes, from Italy by Timothie.

¶ THE GENERAL EPISTLE of IAMES.

CHAP. I

Wee must reioyce vnder the crosse, 5 aske patience of God, 19 heare the word, and doe thereafter. 27 What pure religion is.

IAmes a seruant of God and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue tribes which are scaettred abroad greeting,

2 My brethren, count it all ioy, when ye fall into diuers temptations.

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your Faith, worketh patience,

4 But let patience haue her perfect worke, that yee may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God that giueth to all men liberally, and vpbraideth not: and it shall be giuen him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing wauering: for he that wauereth is like a waue of the Sea, driuen with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man thinke that he shall receiue anything of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree || reioyce in that hee is exalted:

10 But

r, Testament.
r, doing.
glory.

10 But the rich, in that hee is made low; because as the floure of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For the Sunne is no sooner risen with a burning heate, but it withereth the grasse: and the floure thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with || euill, neither tempteth he any man. || Or, euils.

14 But euery man is tempted, when hee is drawen away of his owne lust, and entised.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Doe not erre my beloued brethren.

17 Euery good gift, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, & commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begate hee vs, with the word of Trueth, that wee should bee a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my beloued brethren, let euery man bee swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluity of naughtinesse, and receiue with meekenes the engrafted word, which is able to saue your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, hee is like vnto a man beholding his naturall face in a glasse:

24 For he beholdeth himselfe, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what maner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberties, and continueth therein, hee being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall bee blessed in his || deed. || Or, doing.

26 If any man among you seeme to bee religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion, and vndefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visite the fatherless and widowes

in their affliction, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

1 Christians must not regard the rich and despise the poore. 14 Faith without workes, 17 is a dead faith.

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ the Lord of glory with respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your † assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment:

3 And yee haue respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou here ‖ in a good place: and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footstoole:

4 Are yee not then partiall in your selues and are become iudges of euill thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloued brethren, hath not God chosen the poore of this world, rich in faith, and heires of ‖ the kingdome, which hee hath promised to them that loue him?

6 But yee haue despised the poore. Doe not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the iudgement seats?

7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royall Law according to the Scripture, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, yee doe well.

9 But if ye haue respect of persons, ye commit sinne, and are conuinced of the Law, as transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keepe the whole Law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For hee † that said, Doe not commit adultery, said also, Doe not kill, Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the Law.

12 So speake yee, and so doe, as they that shall be iudged by the Law of liberty.

13 For hee shall haue iudgement without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy, and mercie ‖ reioyceth against iudgement.

14 What doeth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and haue not workes? Can faith saue him?

15 If a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace, be you

Gr. Synagogue.

Or, well, or decently.

Or, that.

Or, that Law which said.

Or, glorieth

you warmed and filled: notwithstanding yee giue them not those things which are needfull to the body: what doeth it profit?

17 Euen so faith, if it hath not workes, is dead, being † alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I haue workes: shew me thy faith, without thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God, thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vaine man, that faith without workes is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified by workes, when he had offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

22 || Seest thou how faith wrought with his workes, and by workes was faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, * Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed to him for righteousnes: and he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then, how that by workes a man is iustified, and not by faith onely.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot iustified by works, when she had receiued the messengers and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the || spirit is dead, so faith without workes is dead also.

†Gr. by its selfe.

|| Some copies reade, by thy works.

||Or, thou seest.

*Gen. 15. 6. rom 4. 3. gal. 3. 6.

||Or, breath.

CHAP. III.

3 The tongue must be bridled. 13 They that are truely wise, be milde and peaceable, without enuying or strife.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that wee shall receiue the greater || condemnation.

2 For in many things wee offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, wee put bits in the horses mouthes, that they may obey vs, and we turne about their whole body.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet art they turned about with a very small helme, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things; behold how great || a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquitie: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the

||Or, iudgement.

||Or, wood.

whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

Gr. nature. 7 For euery † kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath beene

Gr. nature man. tamed † of mankind.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an vnruly euill, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse wee God, euen the Father: and therewith curse wee men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

Or, hole. 11 Doeth a fountaine send foorth at the same || place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, beare olive berries? either a vine figs? so can no fountaine both yeeld salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conuersation his workes with meekenesse of wisedome.

14 But if yee haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

Or, naturall. 15 This wisedome descendeth not from aboue, but is earthly, || sensuall, deuillish.

Gr. tumult, or vnquietnesse. 16 For where enuying and strife is, there is † confusion, and euery euill worke.

17 But the wisedome that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be entreated, full of mercie, and good fruits, || without partialitie, and without hypocrisie.

Or, without wrangling. 18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP, IIII.

1 Against couetousnesse, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction, and rash censuring.

Or, brawlings. FRom whence come warres and || fightings among you? come they not hence, euen of your || lustes, that

Or, pleasures warre in your members?

2 Yee lust, and haue not: yee kill, and desire to haue, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, yet yee haue not, because ye aske not.

3 Yee aske and receiue not, because yee aske amisse, that you may consume it vpon your || lustes.

Or, pleasures. 4 Yee adulterers, and adulteresses, know yee not that the friendship of the world is enmitie with God: who-

whosoeuer therefore will bee a friend of the world, is the enemie of God.

5 Doe yee thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth || to enuie? || Or, enuious.

6 But hee giueth more grace, wherefore hee sayth, *God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace vnto the humble. *Pro. 3 34. 1 pet. 5. 5.

7 Submit your selues therefore to God: resist the deuill, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and hee will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands yee sinners, and purifie your hearts yee double minded.

9 Bee afflicted, and mourne, and weepe: let your laughter bee turned to mourning, and your ioy to heauinesse.

10 Humble your selues in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another (brethren:) hee that speaketh euill of his brother, and iudgeth his brother, speaketh euill of the Law, and iudgeth the Law: but if thou iudge the Law, thou art not a doer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Law-giuer, who is able to saue, and to destroy: who art thou that iudgest another?

13 Goe to now ye that say, To day or to morrow wee will goe into such a citie, and continue there a yeere, and buy, and sell, and get gaine:

14 Whereas yee know not what shall bee on the morrow: *for what is your life? || It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. *Prou. 27. || Or, for it is

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall liue, and doe this or that.

16 But now yee reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to doe good, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of patience. 12 To forbeare swearing. 14 To pray in aduersity, and sing in prosperity.

GOe to now, yee rich men, weepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth-eaten:

3 Your golde and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shall bee a witnesse against you, and shall eate your

flesh as it were fire: yee haue heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers which haue reaped downe your fieldes, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabbath.

5 Yee haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and beene wanton: yee haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter:

6 Yee haue condemned and killed the iust, and hee doeth not resist you.

7 ‖ Bee patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill he receiue the early and latter raine.

Or, bee long patient, or suffer with patience.

8 Bee yee also patient: stablish your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ‖ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the Iudge standeth before the doore.

Or, groane, or grieue not.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets, who haue spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, wee count them happy which endure. Yee haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue seene the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercy.

12 But aboue all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heauen, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, bee yea, and your nay, nay, lest yee fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is any sicke among you? let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray ouer him, anointing him with oyle in the Name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that yee may bee healed: the effectuall feruent prayer of a righteous man auayleth much.

17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as wee are, and hee prayed ‖ earnestly, that it might not raine: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeeres and sixe moneths.

Or, in his prayer.

18 And

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought forth her fruit.
19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the trueth, and one conuert him,
20 Let him know, that hee which conuerteth the sinner from the errour of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERALL of PETER.

CHAP. I.

He blesseth God for his spiritualll graces. 10 Saluation in Christ prophecied of olde. 13 An exhortation to godlinesse.

PEter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,
2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father through sanctification of the spirit vnto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace vnto you and peace be multiplied.
3 Blessed bee the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his † abundant mercy, hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope, by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,
4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and vndefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserued in heauen ‖ for you,
5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith vnto saluation, ready to be reuealed in the last time:
6 Wherein yee greatly reioyce, though now for a season (if neede bee) yee are in heauinesse through manifold temptations:
7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might bee found vnto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Iesus Christ:
8 Whom hauing not seene, yee loue, in whom though now yee see him not, yet beleeuing, yee reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable, and full of glory,
9 Receiuing the end of your faith, euen the saluation of your soules:
10 Of which saluation the Prophets haue enquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come vnto you,

† Gr. much

‖ Or, for vs

11 Searching what, or what maner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was reuealed, that not vnto themselues, but vnto vs, they did minister the things which are now reported vnto you by them that haue preached the Gospel vnto you, with the holy Ghost sent downe from heauen, which things the Angels desire to looke into.

13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your minde, bee sober, and hope † to the ende, for the grace that is to bee brought vnto you at the reuelation of Iesus Christ:

Gr. perfitly.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues according to the former lusts in your ignorance:

15 But as hee which hath called you is holy, so bee yee holy in all maner of conuersation:

16 Because it is written,* Bee yee holy, for I am holy.

Leui. 11. 44 and 19.2. and 20.7.

17 And if yee call on the Father, who without respect of persons iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of your sojourning here in feare:

18 Forasmuch as yee know that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine conuersation receiued by tradition from your fathers:

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish, and without spot,

20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you:

21 Who by him doe beleeue in God that raysed him vp from the dead, and gaue him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye haue purified your selues in obeying the trueth through the spirit, vnto vnfained loue of the brethren: see that yee loue one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being borne againe, not of corruptible seede, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liueth and abideth for euer.

Or, for that

24 || For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flowre of grasse: the grasse witherethh, and the flowre thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the word which by the Gospel is preached vnto you.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee dehorteth them from breach of charitie, 4 sheweth that Christ is the foundation. 13 Obedience to Magistrates. 18 Seruants dueties.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and enuies, and euill speakings,
2 As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby,
3 If so be ye haue tasted that the Lord is gracious.
4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing Stone, disallowed indeede of men, but chosen of God, and precious,
5 Yee also as liuely stones, ‖ are built vp a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ. ‖ Or, bee built.
6 Wherefore it is conteined in the Scripture, * Behold, I lay in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect, precious, and he that beleeueth on him, shall not be confounded. * Isai. 28. psal. 118. mat. 21. 4 actes 4. 1
7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue hee is ‖ precious: but vnto them which bee disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, ‖ Or, hee honour.
8 * And a stone of stumbling, and a rocke of offence, euen to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed. * Isai. 8.
9 But yee are a chosen generation, a royall priesthood, an holy nation, a ‖ peculiar people, that yee should shew foorth the ‖ praises of him, who hath called you out of darkenesse into his maruellous light: ‖ Or, pur sed people ‖ Or, ver
10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obteined mercy, but now haue obteined mercy. * Ose. 2.
11 Dearely beloued, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstaine from fleshly lusts, which warre against the soule,
12 Hauing your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that ‖ whereas they speake against you as euill doers, they may by your good workes which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation. ‖ Or, wh
13 Submit your selues to euery ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme,
14 Or vnto gouernors, as vnto them that are sent by him, for the punishment of euill doers, and for the praise of them that doe well.
15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing yee may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As

16 As free, and not † vsing your liberty for a cloake of
, having. malitiousnesse, but as the seruants of God.
17 || Honour all men. Loue the brotherhood. Feare
, esteeme. God. Honour the King.
18 Seruants, bee subiect to your masters with all
feare, not onely to the good and gentle, but also to the fro-
ward.
19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience
toward God endure griete, suffering wrongfully.
20 For what glory is it, if when yee bee buffeted for
your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye doe
, thanke well, and suffer for it, yee take it patiently, this is || accep-
table with God.
21 For euen hereunto were yee called: because Christ
me read also suffered || for vs, leauing vs an example, that ye should
ou. follow his steps.
22 Who did no sinne, neither was guile found in his
mouth.
23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not againe:
when he suffered, hee threatned not, but || committed him-
, commit- selfe to him that iudgeth righteously.
is cause. 24 Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne
body || on the tree, that wee being dead to sinnes, should
, to liue vnto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.
25 For ye were as sheepe going astray, but are now re-
turned vnto the Shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP. III.

1 The duties of wiues and husbands each to other. 8 An exhortation to vnitie, 14 and to suffer persecution. 20 Christs benefits to the old world.

LIkewise, yee wiues, bee in subiection to your owne hus-
bands, that if any obey not the word, they also may
without the word bee wonne by the conuersation of the
wiues:
2 While they behold your chaste conuersation cou-
pled with feare:
3 Whose adorning, let it not bee that outward ador-
ning, of plaiting the haire, and of wearing of golde, or of
putting on of apparell;
4 But let it bee the hidden man of the heart, in that
which is not corruptible, euen the ornament of a meeke
and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great
price.
5 For after this maner in the olde time, the holy wo-
men also who trusted in God, adorned themselues, being
in subiection vnto their owne husbands.

6 Euen

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose † daughters ye are as long as yee doe well, and are not afraid with any amazement. †Gr. child

7 Likewise, yee husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife as vnto the weaker vessell, and as being heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers bee not hindred.

8 Finally, bee yee all of one minde, hauing compassion one of another, ‖ loue as brethren, bee pitifull, bee courteous, ‖Or, loving the brethren

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or rayling for rayling, but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherite a blessing.

10 For hee that will loue life, and see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his * lips that they speake no guile: *Psal. 34.

11 Let him eschew euill, and dee good: let him seeke peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous, and his eares are open vnto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is † against them that doe euill. †Gr. vpon

13 And who is hee that will harme you, if yee bee followers of that which is good?

14 But and if yee suffer for righteousnesse sake, happy are yee, and bee not * afraid of their terrour, neither bee troubled: *Isai. 8. 12. 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and bee ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekenesse and ‖ feare: ‖Or, reverence.

16 Hauing a good conscience, that whereas they speake euill of you, as of euill doers, they may bee ashamed that falsely accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God bee so, that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vnIust, that he might bring vs to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

19 By which also hee went and preached vnto the spirits in prison.

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the Arke was a preparing: wherein few, that is, eight soules were saued by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, euen Baptisme doeth also now saue vs (not the putting away of the filth of the

the flesh, but the answere of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Who is gone into heauen, and is on the right hand of God, Angels, and authorities, and powers being made subiect vnto him.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Hee exhorteth them to cease from sinne, 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde: for hee that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne:

2 That hee no longer should liue the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice vs to haue wrought the will of the Gentiles, when wee walked in lasciuiousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, reuellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they thinke it strange, that you runne not with them to the same excesse of ryot, speaking euill of you:

5 Who shall giue account to him that is ready to iudge the quicke and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might bee iudged according to men in the flesh, but liue according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: bee yee therefore sober and watch vnto prayer.

8 And aboue all things, haue feruent charitie among your selues: for charitie || shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

|| will.

9 Vse hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gift, euen so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, let him speake as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as of the ability which God giueth, that God in all things may bee glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom be prayse and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you,

13 But reioyce in as much as yee are partakers of

Christs

Christs sufferings; that when his glory shall be reuealed, yee may be glad also with exceeding ioy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are yee: for the Spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you: on their part hee is euill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or as a thiefe, or as an euill doer, or as a busibodie in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.

17 For the time is come, that iudgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at vs, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly and sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the wil of God, commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creatour.

CHAP. V.

1 Hee exhorteth the Elders to feede their flockes, 5 the yonger to obey, 8 and all to be sober, watchfull and constant: 9 to resist the deuill.

THe Elders which are among you, I exhort, who am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall bee reuealed.

2 Feede the flocke of God || which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind:

3 Neither as || being lords ouer Gods heritage: but being ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, yee shall receiue a crowne of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise yee younger, submit your selues vnto the elder, yea, all of you bee subiect one to another, and bee clothed with humilitie: for God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care vpon him, for hee careth for you.

8 Bee sober, bee vigilant: because your aduersary the deuill, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure.

9 Whom

†Gr. as mu[illegible] as in you i[illegible]

||Or, ouer-ruling.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace who hath called vs into his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him bee glory and dominion for euer and euer Amen.

12 By Syluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, (as I suppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected, together with you, saluteth you, and so doeth Marcus my sonne.

14 Greet yee one another with a kisse of charitie: Peace be with you all that are in Christ Iesus. Amen.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to make their calling sure. 12 Hee speaketh of his owne death, 16 and warneth them to be constant in faith.

Imon Peter, a seruant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to them that haue obtained like precious faith with vs, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ;

2 Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you through the knowledge of God, and of Iesus our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that pertaine vnto life and godlinesse, through the knowledge of him that hath called vs || to glory and vertue.

by.

4 Whereby are giuen vnto vs exceeding great and precious promises, that by these you might be partakers of the diuine nature, hauing escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giuing all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience, and to patience, godlinesse;

7 And

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charitie.
8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that yee shall neither bee barren, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.
9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see afarre off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his olde sinnes.
10 Wherefore, the rather, brethren, giue diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if yee doe these things, ye shall neaer fall.
11 For so an entrance shal be ministred vnto you abundantly, into the euerlasting Kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.
12 Wherefore I will not bee negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, though yee know them, and be stablished in the present truth.
13 Yea, I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance:
14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, euen as, * our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed mee. *Ioh. 21.
15 Moreouer, I will endeuour, that you may be able after my decease, to haue these things alwayes in remembrance.
16 For wee haue not followed cunningly deuised fables, when wee made known vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his Maiestie.
17 For hee receiued from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voyce to him from the excellent glory; This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.
18 And this voyce which came from heauen we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.
19 We haue also a more sure word of prophesie, whereunto yee doe well that yee take heed, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts:
20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation:
21 For the prophesie came not ‖ in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were mooued by the holy Ghost. ‖ Or, at any time.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, 10 and fully describeth their maners.

BUt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shall be false teachers among you, who priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord that bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift destruction.

2 And many shall follow their || pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of trueth shall bee euill spoken of:

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained words make merchandise of you, whose iudgement now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them downe to hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darknesse, to be reserued vnto iudgement:

5 And spared not the olde world, but saued Noah the eight person a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodome and Gomorrha into ashes, condemned them with an ouerthrow, making them an ensample vnto those that after should liue vngodly:

7 And deliuered iust Lot, vexed with the filthie conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, with their vnlawfull deeds.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuer the godly out of temptations, & to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise || gouernment. Presumptuous are they; selfe-willed: they are not afraid * to speake euill of dignities:

11 Whereas Angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation || against them before the Lord.

12 But these as naturall bruit beasts made to bee taken and destroyed, speake euill of the things that they vnderstand not, and shall vtterly perish in their owne corruption:

13 And shall receiue the reward of vnrighteousnesse, as they that count it pleasure to ryot in the day time:

Spots

Or, lasciuious wayes, as some copies made.

Or, dominion. Iude 8.

Some made, against themselues.

Spots they are, and blemishes, sporting themselues with their owne deceiuings, while they feast with you:

14 Hauing eyes full of †adultery, and that cannot cease from sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: an heart they haue exercised with couetous practises: cursed children:

†Gr. an adulteresse.

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the sonne of Bosor, who loued the wages of vnrighteousnesse,

16 But was rebuked for his iniquitie, the dumbe asse speaking with mans voyce, forbad the madnesse of the Prophet.

17 These are wels without water, clouds that are caried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserued for euer.

18 For when they speake great swelling words of vanitie, they allure through the lustes of the flesh, through much wantonnesse, those that were ‖ cleane escaped from them who liue in errour.

‖ Or, for a little, or a while, as some read.

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselues are the seruants of corruption: for of whom a man is ouercome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they haue escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, they are againe entangled therein, and ouercome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to haue knowen the way of righteousnesse, then after they haue knowen it, to turne from the holy Commandement deliuered vnto them.

22 But it is happened vnto them according to the true prouerbe: The dogge is turned to his owne vomit againe, and the Sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

1 The certaintie of Christs comming to iudgement. 10 The manner how the world shall be destroyed. 11 An exhortation to godlinesse.

THis second Epistle (beloued) I now write vnto you, in both which I stirre vp your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the Commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their owne lusts,

4 And saying, where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the Creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heauens were of old, and the earth † standing out of the water, and in the water,

† Gr. consisting.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being ouerflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heauens and earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserued vnto fire against the day of Judgement, and perdition of vngodly men.

8 But (beloued) bee not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lord is not slacke concerning his promise (as some men count slackness) but is long suffering to vs-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thiefe in the night, in which the heauens shall passe away with a great noyse, and the Elements shall melt with feruent heate, the earth also and the workes that are therein shall be burnt vp.

11 Seeing then that all these things shal be dissolued, What maner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conuersation, and godlinesse?

12 ‖ Looking for and hasting vnto the comming of the day of God, wherein the heauens being on fire shall bee dissolued, and the Elements shall melt with feruent heat?

‖ Or, hasting the comming.

13 Neuertheless wee, according to his promise, looke for new heauens, and a new earth wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloued) seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that yee may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long suffering of the Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul also, according to the wisedome giuen vnto him, hath written vnto you.

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest as

as they do also the other Scriptures, vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloued, seeing yee know these things, before, beware lest ye also being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for euer. Amen.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of IOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, 2 in whom is eternall life 3 by communion with God: To which we must ioyne holinesse of life.

THat which was from the beginning, which wee haue heard, which wee haue seene with our eyes, which wee haue looked vpon, and our hands haue handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifested, and wee haue seene it, and beare witnesse, and shew vnto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested vnto vs.)

3 That which we haue seene and heard, declare wee vnto you, that ye also may haue fellowship with vs; and truely our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If wee say that wee haue fellowship with him, and walke in darknesse, we lie and doe not the truth.

7 But if wee walke in the light, as he is in the light, we haue fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

8 If wee say that wee haue no sinne, wee deceiue ourselues, and the truth is not in vs.

9 If wee confesse our sinnes, hee is faithfull, and iust to forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnesse.

10 If wee say that wee haue not sinned, we make him a lyar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ our Aduocate. 3 To know God, is to keepe his Commandements, 9 to loue our brethren, 15 and not to loue the world.

MY little children, these things write I vnto you, that yee sinne not. And if any man sinne, we haue an aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the righteous.

2 And hee is the propitiation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes of the whole world.

3 And hereby we doe know that we know him, if we keepe his commandements.

4 Hee that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a lyar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the loue of God perfected: heereby know wee that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himselfe also to walke, euen as he walked.

7 Brethren I write no new commandement vnto you, but an old commandement which yee had from the beginning: the old commandement is the word which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you which thing is true in him and in you: because the darknesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darknesse euen vntill now.

10 He that loueth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of † stumbling in him.

Gr scandall

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darkenes, and knoweth not whither he goeth because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write vnto you little children, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you fathers, because ye haue knowne him, that is from the beginning. I write vnto you young men, because you haue ouercome the wicked one. I write vnto you little children, because yee haue knowne the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, because yee are strong, and the word

word of God abideth in you, and yee haue ouercome the wicked one.

15 Loue not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loue the world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof, but he that doth the will of God abideth for euer.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shal come, euen now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that this is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had beene of vs, they would no doubt haue continued with vs: but they went out that they might bee made manifest, that they were not all of vs.

20 But yee haue an vnction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because yee know not the trueth: but because yee know it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyar, but he that denieth that Iesus is the Christ? he is Antichrist, that denieth the Father, and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Sonne, hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which yee haue heard from the beginning: if that which yee haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that hee hath promised vs, euen eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the annointing which ye haue receiued of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But as the same annointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and euen as it hath taught you ye shall abide in || him. ||Or, it.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when hee shal appeare, we may haue confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, || yee know that ||Or, know
euery one which doeth righteousnesse is borne of him.

CHAP. III.

1 God manifesteth his loue in making vs his sonnes. 3 Who must be pure as he is pure.

BEhold, what maner of loue the Father hath bestowed vpon vs, that we should be called the sonnes of God: therefore the world knoweth vs not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloued now are we the sonnes of God, and it doeth not yet appeare, what we shal be: but we know, that when he shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the law: for sinne is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoeuer abideth in him sinneth not: whosoeuer sinneth hath not seene him, neither knowen him.

7 Little children let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteousnesse, is righteous, euen as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the deuill, for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Sonne of God was manifested, that he might destroy the workes of the deuill.

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, doeth not commit sinne: for his seed remaineth in him, and hee cannot sin, because hee is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the deuill: whosoeuer doeth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither hee that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the ‖message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should loue one another.

‖ or, commandement.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, & slew his brother: and wherefore slew hee him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marualle not, my brethren, if the world hate you:

14 We know that wee haue passed from death vnto life, because wee loue the brethren: he that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a murtherer, and yee know that no murtherer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceiue wee the loue of God, because he laid

laid downe his life for vs: and wee ought to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother hath need, and shutteth vp his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My little children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue, but in deede and in truth.

19 And hereby wee know that wee are of the truth, and shall † assure our hearts before him.

† Gr. persuade.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we confidence toward God.

22 And whatsoeuer wee aske, wee receiue of him, because wee keepe his commandement, and doe those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandement, that wee should beleeue on the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as he gaue vs commandement.

24 And hee that keepeth his commandements dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in vs, by the spirit which he hath giuen vs.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Hee warneth them not to beleeue all teachers, but to trie them by the rules of the Catholike faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth them to brotherly loue.

BEloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but try the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know yee the Spirit of God: euery spirit that confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery Spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist whereof you haue heard, that it should come, and euen now already is it in the world.

4 Yee are of God, little children, and haue ouercome them, because greater is he that is in you, then hee that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth vs: hee that is not of God, heareth not vs: hereby know wee the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue is of God: and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

9 In this was manifested the loue of God towards vs, because that God sent his onely begotten Sonne into the world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that wee loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne to be the propitiation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, wee ought also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any time. If wee loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfected in vs.

13 Hereby know wee that we dwell in him, and hee in vs, because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And wee haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent the Sonne to be the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer shall confesse that Iesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And wee haue knowen and beleeued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is † our loue made perfect, that wee may haue boldnesse in the day of Iudgement, because as he is, so are we in this world.

† loue to vs.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: because feare hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in loue.

19 Wee loue him: because he first loued vs.

20 If a man say, I loue God, and hateth his brother, hee is a lyar. For hee that loueth not his brother whom hee hath seene, how can hee loue God whom hee hath not seene?

21 And this commandement haue wee from him, that he who loueth God, loue his brother also.

CHAP. V.

1 Hee that loueth God, loueth his children, and keepeth his commandements: 3 which to the faithfull are not grieuous. 11 Iesus able to saue vs.

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is the Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him that begate, loueth him also that is begotten of him.

2 By

2 By this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements.
3 For this is the loue of God, that wee keepe his commandements, & his commandements are not grieuous.
4 For whatsoeuer is borne of God, ouercommeth the world, and this is the victorie that ouercommeth the world, euen our faith.
5 Who is hee that ouercommeth the world, but hee that beleeueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God?
6 This is hee that came by water and blood, euen Iesus Christ, not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is trueth.
7 For there are three that beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.
8 And there are three that beare witnesse in earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood: and these three agree in one.
9 If wee receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which hee hath testified of his Sonne.
10 Hee that beleeueth on the Sonne, of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: hee that beleeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, because hee beleeueth not the record that God gaue of his Sonne.
11 And this is the record, that God hath giuen to vs eternall life, and this life is in his Sonne.
12 He that hath the Sonne, hath life: and he that hath not the Sonne, hath not life.
13 These things haue I written vnto you that beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God, that yee may know, that yee haue eternall life, and that yee may beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God.
14 And this is the confidence that wee haue ‖ in him, that if wee aske any thing according to his will, hee heareth vs.
15 And if wee know that he heare vs, whatsoeuer wee aske, we know that we haue the petitions that we desired of him.
16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne which is not vnto death, hee shall aske, and hee shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I doe not say that he shall pray for it.
17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, and there is a sinne not vnto death.

‖ Or, concerning him.

18 We

18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but hee that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And wee know that wee are of God, and the whole world lyeth in wickednesse.

20 And wee know that the Sonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs an vnderstanding, that we may know him that is true: and wee are in him that is true, euen in his Sonne Iesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children, keepe your selues from idols. Amen.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE of IOHN.

Exhortations to perseuere in Christian loue and beliefe; 8 lest we lose the reward of our profession. 10 To auoid seducers.

THe Elder vnto the elect Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but also all they that haue knowen the trueth:

2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for euer:

3 Grace bee with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ, the Sonne of the Father in trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commandement from the Father.

5 And now, I beseech thee Lady, not as though I wrote a new commandement vnto thee: but that which we had from the beginning; that we loue one another.

6 And this is loue; that wee walke after his commandements. This is the commandement, that as yee haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiuer, and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we loose not those things which we haue || wrought, but that wee receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: hee that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father & the Sonne.

10 If

r, gained. me copies ade, which haue gained, but that receiue, c.

10 If there come any to you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not into your house, neither bid him, God speede.

11 For he that biddeth him God speede, is partaker of his euill deedes.

12 Hauing many things to write vnto you, I would not write with paper and inke, but I trust to come vnto you, and speake † face to face, that our ioy may be full. †Gr. mouth to mouth.

13 The children of thy elect sister greete thee. Amen.

¶ THE THIRD EPISTLE of IOHN.

Gaius commended for pietie, 5 and hospitalitie 7 to true preachers 9 Diotrephes dispraised for ambition, 12 The good report of Demetrius confirmed.

THE Elder vnto the welbeloued Gaius whom I loue ‖ in the trueth: ‖Or, truely.

2 Beloued, I ‖ wish aboue all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, euen as thy soule prospereth. ‖Or, pray.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the trueth that is in thee, euen as thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy, then to heare that my children walke in trueth.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charitie before the Church: whom if thou bring forward on their iourney after a godly sort, thou shalt doe well:

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be fellow helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church, but Diotrephes, who loueth to haue ꝑ preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deedes which hee doeth, prating against vs with malicious words, and not content therewith, neither doeth hee himselfe receiue the brethren, & forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God: but hee that doeth euill, hath not seene God.

12 Deme-

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the
truth it selfe: yea, and we also beare record, and ye know
that our record is true.
13 I had many things to write, but I will not with
inke and pen write vnto thee;
14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and wee shall
speake † face to face. Peace bee to thee. Our friends sa-
lute thee. Greete the friends by name.

Gr. mouth to mouth.

¶ THE GENERAL EPISTLE of IVDE.

1 An exhortation to constancie in faith. 13 Horrible punishments prepared for false teachers. 20 The godly by prayer in the holy Ghost grow in grace.

IVde the seruant of Iesus Christ, and bro-
ther of Iames, to them that are sanctified
by God the Father, and preserued in Ie-
sus Christ, and called:
2 Mercy vnto you, and peace, and loue
be multiplyed.
3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto
you of the common saluation: it was needefull for me to
write vnto you, and exhort you that yee should earnestly
contend for the faith which was once deliuered vnto the
Saints.
4 For there are certaine men crept in vnawares, who
were before of olde ordained to this condemnation, vn-
godly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciuious-
nesse, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Ie-
sus Christ.
5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though
yee once knew this, how that the Lord hauing saued the
people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed
them that beleeued not.
6 And the Angels which kept not their ‖ first estate,
but left their owne habitation, hee hath reserued in euer-
lasting chaines vnder darkenesse, vnto the iudgement of
the great day.
7 Euen as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities a-
bout them, in like maner giuing themselues ouer to for-
nication, and going after † strange flesh, are set forth for
an example, suffering the vengeance of eternall fire.
8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh,
despise dominion, and speake euill of dignities.

Or, principa-tie.

Gr. other.

9 Yet

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when contending with the deuill, hee disputed about the bodie of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, *The Lord rebuke thee. *Zach. 3. 2.

10 But these speake euill of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as bruit beasts in those things they corrupt themselues.

11 Woe vnto them, for they haue gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the errour of Balaam, for reward, and perished in the gainesaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charitie, when they feast with you, feeding themselues without feare: clouds they are without water, carryed about of windes, trees whose fruit withereth without fruit, twice dead, plucked vp by the rootes.

13 Raging waues of the Sea, foming out their owne shame, wandring starres, to whom is reserued the blacknesse of darknesse for euer.

14 And Enoch also, the seuenth from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord commeth with ten thousands of his Saints.

15 To execute iudgement vpon all, and to conuince all that are vngodly among them, of all their vngodly deedes which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their hard speeches, which vngodly sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lust, and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, hauing mens persons in admiration because of aduantage.

17 But beloued, remember yee the words which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ:

18 How that they told you there should bee mockers in the last time, who should walke after their owne vngodly lusts.

19 These bee they, who separate themselues, sensuall, hauing not the spirit.

20 But yee, beloued, building vp your selues on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ vnto eternall life.

22 And of some haue compassion, making a difference:

23 And others saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire: hating euen the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding ioy,

25 To the onely wise God our Sauiour, be glory and maiestie, dominion and power, now and euer. Amen.

¶THE REVELATION OF S. IOHN the Diuine.

CHAP. I.

4 He writeth to the seuen Churches of Asia. 7 The comming of Christ: His power and Maiesty.

THe Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, to shew vnto his seruants things which must shortly come to passe: and hee sent and signified it by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn.

2 Who bare record of the word: of God and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw,

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophecie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

od.3.14. 4 Iohn to the seauen Churches in Asia, Grace be vnto you, and peace from him * which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seuen spirits which are before his Throne:

5 And from Iesus Christ, who is the faithfull witnesse, and the *first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth: vnto him that loued vs: *and washed vs from our sinnes in his owne blood,

or.15. ol.1.18. .9.14. et.2.5.

6 And hath *made vs Kings and Priests vnto God, and his Father: to him bee glory and dominion for euer and euer. Amen,

.24.30 7 *Beheld, he commeth with cloudes, and euery eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kinreds of the earth shall waile because of him; euen so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almightie.

9 I Iohn, who also am your brother and companion in tribulation', and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the Ile that is called Patmos, for

for the word of God, and for the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me a great voyce, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha, and Omega, the first and the last: and what thou seest write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamos, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voyce that spake with me. And being turned I saw seuen golden candlesticks,

13 And in the midst of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head and his haire were white like wooll, as white as snow: and his eyes were as a flame of fire.

15 And his feet like vnto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voyce as the sound of many waters.

16 And hee had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his countenance was as the Sunne shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete as dead: and hee layd his right hand vpon mee, saying vnto mee, Feare not,* I am the first and the last. *Esay 41. and 46. 6.

18 I am he that liueth, and was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen, and haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things that thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shal be hereafter.

20 The mystery of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden Candlesticks. The seuen stars are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen Candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

CHAP. II.

1 What is to bee written to the Angels of the Churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos, 18 Thyatira: and what is worthy praise or dispraise in them.

VNto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus, write, These things saith hee that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seuen golden Candlesticks:

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare them which are euill, and thou hast tryed them which say they are Apostles and are not, and hast found them lyars:

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheless, I haue somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, and will remooue thy candlesticke out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deedes of the Nicholaitanes, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches: To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eate of the tree of life, which is in the middest of the Paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is aliue,

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation, and poueritie, but thou art rich, and I know the blasphemie of them which say they are Iewes, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tryed, and yee shall haue tribulation ten dayes: bee thou faithfull vnto death, and I will giue thee a crowne of life.

11 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, Hee that ouercommeth, shal not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the Angel of the Church in Pergamos, write, These things saith hee, which hath the sharpe sword with two edges:

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, euen where Satans seat is, and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not denyed my faith, euen in those dayes, wherein Antipas was my faithfull Martyr, who was slaine among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of * Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, to eate things sacrificed vnto idoles, and to commit fornication.

Num. 25.

15 So

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.
16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.
17 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the hidden Manna, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saiuing he that receiueth it.
18 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Sonne of God, who hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete are like fine brasse:
19 I know thy workes, and charitie, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and the last to bee more then the first.
20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, because thou suffrest that woman * Iezabel, which calleth her selfe a Prophetesse, to teach and seduce my seruants to commit fornication, and to eate things sacrificed vnto idoles. * 1. Kings 16. 31.
21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.
22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.
23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the Churches shall know that I * am he which searcheth the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according to your workes. * Ier. 11. 2 and 17. 1
24 But vnto you I say, and vnto the rest in Thyatira, as many as haue not this doctrine, and which haue not knowen the depths of Satan, as they speake, I will put vpon you no other burden:
25 But that which yee haue already, hold fast till I come.
26 And hee that ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes vnto the end, to him will I giue power ouer the nations:
27 (* And hee shall rule them with a rod of yron: as the vessels of a potter shall they bee broken to shiuers:) euen as I receiued of my Father. *Psal. 2. 9.
28 And I will giue him the morning starre.
29 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. III.

2 The Angel of the Church of Sardis reprooued, 10 Of Philadelphia approoued, 15 Of Laodicea rebuked, 20 Christ standeth at the doore, and knocketh.

AND vnto the Angel of the Church of Sardis write, These things saith hee, that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen starres: I know thy workes, that thou hast a name thot thou liuest, and art dead.

2 Bee watchfull, and strengthen the things which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore, how thou hast receiued and heard, and hold fast, and repent. *If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a theefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

1.Thes.5.2. 2pet.3.10.

4 Thou hast a few names euen in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that ouercommeth, the same shall bee clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot his name out of the *booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels.

Chap.20. 2.phil.4.3.

6 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

7 And to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, hee that hath the key of Dauid, hee that openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy works: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denyed my Name,

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but doe lie: Behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feete, and to know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the houre of temptation, which shall come vpon all the world, to try them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly, hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is new Hierusalem, which

which commeth downe out of heaven from my God: And I will write vpon him my new Name.

13 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church || of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creation of God:

|| Or, in Laodicea.

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither cold nor hot, I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art luke warme, and neither cold nor hote, I will spew thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue neede of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked:

18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tryed in the fire, that thou mayest bee rich, and white raiment, that thou mayest bee clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse doe not appeare, and anoint thine eyes with eye-salue, that thou mayest see.

19 *As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore, and repent.

*Pro. 3. 11. heb. 12. 5.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke: if any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that ouercommeth, wil I graunt to sit with mee in my throne, euen as I also ouercame, and am set downe with my Father in his Throne.

22 He that hath an eare let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Iohn seeth the Throne of God, 4 about which are foure and twentie Elders sitting, 10 who lay downe their crownes, and worship him that sate on the Throne.

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was opened in heaven: and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with me, which said, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee things which must bee hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit, and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sate on the throne.

3 And he that sate was to looke vpon like a Iasper, and a Sardine stone: and there was a rainebow round about the Throne, in sight like vnto an Emerald.

4 And round about the Throne were foure and twenty seats, and vpon the seats I saw foure and twenty

Elders sitting clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold,

5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voices; and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the seuen Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto Christall: and in the middest of the Throne, and round about the Throne, were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast was like a Lyon, and the second beast like a Calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Eagle,

8 And the foure beastes had each of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they † rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

Or they
ue no rest.
Esay 6.3.

9 And when those beasts giue glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sate on the throne, who liueth for euer and euer:

10 The foure and twenty Elders fall downe before him that sate on the Throne, & worship him that liueth for euer and euer, and cast their crownes before the Throne, saying,

11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

Chap. 5.12.

CHAP. V.

1 The booke with seuen seales. 9 not to be opened but by the Lambe slaine. 12 The Elders praise the Lambe.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the Throne, a booke written within, and on the backeside sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I saw a strong Angel proclaiming with a loud voyce: Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to reade the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders saith vnto me, Weepe not: behold, * the Lyon of the tribe of Iuda, the roote of Dauid, hath preuailed to open the booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof.

Gen. 49.9.

6 And

6 And I beheld, and loe, in the middest of the Throne and of the foure Beasts, and in the middest of the Elders stood a Lambe as it had beene slaine, hauing seuen hornes and seuen eyes, which are the seuen Spirits of God, sent foorth into all the earth.

7 And hee came and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the Throne.

8 And when he had taken the booke, the foure Beasts, and foure and twenty Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one of them harps, and golden vials full of || odours, which are the prayers of Saints.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the booke, and to open the seales thereof: for thou wast slaine, & hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euery kinred, and tongue, and people, and nation:

10 * And hast made vs vnto our God Kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels, round about the Throne, and the Beasts, and the Elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying with a lowd voice, Worthy is the Lambe that was slaine, to receiue power, and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And euery creature which is in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory and power bee vnto him that sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer and euer.

14 And the foure Beasts said, Amen. And the foure and twenty Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euer and euer.

|| Or, incense

* 1. Pet. 2.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seales in order, and what followed thereupon, containing a prophecie to the worlds end.

AND I saw when the Lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the foure beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold a white horse, and hee that sate on him, had a bow, & a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went foorth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was giuen vnto him that sate thereon, to take

peace from the earth, & that they should kill one another: and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse: and he that sate on him had a paire of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the middest of the foure beasts say, ‖ A measure of wheate for a peny, and three measures of barley for a penny, and see thou hurt not the oyle, and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, & his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was giuen ‖ vnto them, ouer the fourth part of the earth to kill with the sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fift seale, I saw vnder the altar, the soules of them that were slaine for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they held.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, How long, O Lord, holy, and true, dost thou not iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were giuen vnto euery one of them, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest yet for a little season vntill their fellow seruants also, and their brethren that should bee killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixt seale, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the Sunne became blacke, as sackcloth of haire, and the Moone became as blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, euen as a fig-tree casteth her ‖ vntimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty winde.

14 * And the heauen departed, as a scrowle, when it is rolled together, and euery mountaine and Iland were moued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mightie men, and euery bondman, and euery free man, hid themselues in the denues, and in the rockes of the mountaines,

16 And said to the mountaines and rockes, Fall on vs, and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:

17 For

The word Pennix signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and twelfe part of a quart.

Or, to him.

Or, greene figs.

Esa. 34. 4.

Luke. 23. 30

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 The seruants of God sealed, 4 The number of the tribes that were sealed. 9 An infinite number before the Throne, clad in white robes.

AND after these things, I saw foure Angels standing on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the winde should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel ascending from the East, hauing the seale of the liuing God: and hee cryed with a lowde voyce to the foure Angels to whom it was giuen to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the Sea, nor the trees, till wee haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and foure thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, & kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the Throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with white robes, and palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a lowd voyce, saying, Saluation to our God, which sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: blessing, and glory, and wisedome, and thanksgiuing, and honour, and power, and might be vnto our God for euer and euer. Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying vnto mee, What are these which are arayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Sir, thou knowest. And hee sayd to mee, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they before the Throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple: and he that sitteth on the Throne, shall * dwell among them.

ap.21.3.

i.49.10. 16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the Sun light on them, nor any heate.

17 For the Lambe, which is in the midst of the throne, shall feede them, and shall leade them vnto liuing fountaines of waters: * and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

.25.8.

.21.4.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seuenth seale, 2 seuen trumpets are giuen to seuen Angels, 3 and to another much incense to offer with the prayers of the Saints.

AND when hee had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about the space of halfe an houre.

2 And I saw the seuen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angel came and stood at the Altar, hauing a golden Censer, and there was giuen vnto him much incense, that he should || offer it with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden Altar which was before the throne.

adde it to rayers.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the Saints, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the Censer, and filled it with fire of the Altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voyces, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake:

6 And the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to sound.

7 The first Angel sounded, and there followed haile and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast vpon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt vp, and all greene grasse was burnt vp.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampe, and it fell vpon the third part of the riuers, and vpon the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormewood, and the third part of the waters became Wormewood, and many men dyed of the waters because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the Sunne was smitten, and the third part of the Moone, and the third part of the Starres, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying through the middest of heauen, saying with a lowd voyce, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voyces of the trumpet of the three Angels which are yet to sound.

CHAP. IX.

1 The fift Angel sounding, a starre falleth from heauen, to whom is giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit. 2 Hee opening the pit, Locusts come forth.

AND the fift Angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth: and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And hee opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the Sunne and the ayre were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke Locusts vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was giuen that they should not kill them, but that they should bee tormented fiue moneths, and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to dye, and death shall flee from them.

7 And

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heads were as it were crownes like golde, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hayre as the hayre of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lyons.

9 And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of yron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battell.

10 And they had tayles like vnto scorpions, and there were stings in their tayles: and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greeke tongue hath his name ‖ Apollyon.

That is to say. A destroyer.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the first Angel sounded, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden Altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the first Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared ‖ for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeere, for to slay the third part of men.

Or, at.

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sate on them, hauing breastplates of fire, and of Iacinct, and brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of Lyons, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth & in their tailes: for their tayles were like vnto serpents, and had heads, and with them they doe hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the workes of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, * and idoles of golde, and siluer, and brasse, and stone, and of wood, which neither can see, nor heare, nor walke:

Psal. 115. 4. & 135. 15.

21 Neither

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their theefts.

CHAP. X.

An Angel appeareth with a booke open: 6 he sweareth that there shall be no more time. 9 Iohn is commanded to eate the booke.

AND I saw another mighty Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloude, and a rainebow was vpon his head, and his face was as it were the Sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And hee had in his hand a little Booke open: and he set his right foote vpon the sea, and his left foote on the earth,

3 And cryed with a lowd voyce, as when a Lyon roareth: and when hee had cryed, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: and I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders vttered, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I saw stand vpon the Sea, and vpon the earth, lifted vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euer and euer, who created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the Sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen spake vnto me againe, and sayd, Goe, and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angel which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angell, and sayd vnto him, Giue mee the little booke. And he sayd vnto me, * Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweete as hony. *Ezek. 2. and 3. 3.

10 And I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth sweete as honie: and assoone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And hee said vnto mee, Thou must prophesie againe before many peoples, and Nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

3 Two witnesses prophesie. 6 They haue power to shut heauen that it raine not. 14 The second woe past.

AND there was giuen mee a reede like vnto a rod, and the Angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the Court which is without the Temple † leaue out, and measure it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy Citie shall they tread vnder foote fortie and two moneths.

3 And ‖ I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore daies clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the * two olue trees, and the two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and deuoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this maner be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the daies of their prophesie: and haue power ouer waters to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall haue finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the streete of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three daies and a halfe, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to bee put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shall reioyce ouer them, and make merry, and shal send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three daies and an halfe the Spirit of life from God, entred into them: & they stood vpon their feete, and great feare fell vpon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie fell, and in the earthquake were

Gr. cast out.

Or, I will giue vnto my two witnesses that they may prophesie.

Zach 4.3.

Rev. 11.14.

were slaine † of men seuen thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gaue glory to the God of heauen. † Gr. name of men.

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe commeth quickely.

15 And the seuenth Angel sounded, and there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are become the kingdomes of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall raigne for euer and euer.

16 And the foure and twenty Elders which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and them that feare thy Name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which || destroy the earth. || Or, corr

19 And the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his Testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman clothed with the Sunne. trauaileth, 4 before whom the dragon standeth ready to deuoure her childe: 5 which is caught vp vnto God.

AND there appeared a great || wonder in heauen, a woman clothed with the Sunne, and the Moone vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres: || Or, signe.

2 And shee being with childe, cryed, trauailing in birth, and pained to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another ||wonder in heauen, and behold, a great red dragon, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads. || Or, signe

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and did cast them to the earth: And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuoure her childe as soone as it was borne.

5 And shee brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her childe was caught vp vnto God, and to his Throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where shee hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her

her there a thousand, two hundred and threescore dayes.

7 And there was warre in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, & the dragon fought and his Angels,

8 And preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon was cast out that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, which deceiueth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, & his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voyce, saying in heauen, Now is come saluation and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they ouercame him by the blood of the Lambe and by the word of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them: Woe to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuil is come down vnto you, hauing great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man childe.

14 And to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that she might flee into the wilderness into her place, where she is nourished for a time, & times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman: that he might cause her to bee caried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallow vp the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 A beast with seuen heads riseth out of the sea. 2 to whom the dragon yeeldeth his power. 11 Another beast comming out of the earth 16 marketh all in their foreheads.

AND I stood vpon the sand of the sea: and saw a beast rise vp out of the sea, having seuen heads, and tenne hornes and vpon his hornes tenne crownes and vpon his heads the ‖ name of blasphemy. 2 And

names.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like vnto a Leopard, and his feete were as the feet of a beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lion: and the dragon gaue him his power, and his seat, and great authoritie.

3 And I saw one of his heads as it were † wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondred after the beast. †Gr. slaine.

4 And they worshipped the dragon, which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to make warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him || to continue forty and two moneths. ||Or, to make warre.

6 And hee opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his Taberuacle, and them that dwelt in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to ouercome them: And power was giuen him ouer all kinreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worshippe him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare:

10 He that leadeth into captiuity, shall goe into captiuity: *He that killeth with the sword, must hee killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints. *Mat.26.5

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and he had two hornes like a Lambe, and hee spake as a dragon.

12 And hee exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heauen on the earth in the sight of men.

14 And deceiueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of those miracles which hee had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did liue.

15 And he had power to giue † life vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed. †Gr. breath

16 And

Gr. to give. 16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, † to receiue a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy, or sell, saue hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast: or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath vnderstanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is, six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe with his company, standeth on mount Sion
6 An Angel preacheth the Gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon.
15 The haruest of the world.

AND I looked, and loe, a lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourty and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their fore-heads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauen, as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers, harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth and fourtie and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgines: These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoeuer hee goeth: These † were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lambe.

Gr. were ought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another Angel flie in the midst of heauen, hauing the euerlasting Gospel to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery Nation, and kindred and tongue and people,

7 Saying with a loude voyce, Feare God and giue glory to him, for the houre of his iudgement is come: and * worship him that made heauen and earth, and the Sea, and the fountaines of waters.

Psal. 146. 5. Acts 14. 15. Esai. 21. 9. Ierem 51. 8. Rev. 18. 2.

8 And there followed another Angel saying, * Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great citie, because she made all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a
lowd voyce, If any man worship the beast and his image,
and receiue his marke in his forehead, or in his hand:
10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of
God, which is powred out without mixture into the cup
of his indignation, and he shalbe tormented with fire and
brimstone in the presence of the holy Angels, and in the
presence of the Lambe.
11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth vp for
euer and euer. And they haue no rest day nor night who
worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth
the marke of his name.
12 Here is the patience of the Saints: Here are they
that keepe the Commandements of God, and the faith
of Iesus.
13 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee,
Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord,
|| from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may
rest from their labours, and their workes doe follow
them.
14 And I looked, and beholde a white cloud, and vp-
on the cloud one sate like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing
on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe
sickle.
15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, cry-
ing with a loud voyce vnto him that sate on the cloude:
* Thrust in thy sickle and reape, for the time is come for
thee to reape, for the harueſt of the earth is || ripe.
16 And he that sate on the cloud thrust in his sickle on
the earth, and the earth was reaped.
17 And another Angel came out of the Temple which
is in heauen, he also hauing a sharpe sickle.
18 And another Angel came out from the Altar, which
had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loud cry to him
that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe
sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for
her grapes are fully ripe.
19 And the Angel thrust in his sickle into the earth,
and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the
great winepresse of the wrath of God.
20 And the winepresse was troden without the citie,
and blood came out of the winepresse, euen vnto the horse
bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundred
furlongs.

|| Or, from henceforth saith the Spirit, yea.

* Ioel 3.1

|| Or, drie

CHAP XV.

1 The seuen Angels with their seuen last plagues, 2 The song

of the that ouercome the beast. 7 The seuen vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues, for in them is fillēd vp the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a Sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory ouer the beast and ouer the image, and ouer his marke, and ouer the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, hauing the harpes of God.

3 *And they sing the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy workes, Lord God Almighty, *iust and true are thy wayes, thou king of Saints.

*Exod. 15.1

*Psa. 145.17

4 *Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou onely art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy iudgements are made manifest.

*Ier. 10.7

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimonie in heauen was opened:

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, hauing the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and white linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles,

7 And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto the seuen Angels, seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who liueth for euer and euer.

8 And the Temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The Angels powre out their vials of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ commeth as a thiefe.

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, and powre out the vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went and powred out his viall vpon the earth, & there fell a noysome and grieuous sore vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing soule died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the

the riuers, and the fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shall be, because thou hast iudged thus:

6 For they haue shed the blood of Saints, and Prophets, and thou hast giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Altar say, Euen so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall vpon the Sunne, and power was giuen vnto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were ‖ scorched with great heate, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues: and they repented not to giue him glory. ‖ Or, burned

10 And the fift Angel powred out his viall vpon the seat of the beast, and his kingdome was full of darkenesse and they gnawed their tongues for paine,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen, because of their paines, and their sores, and repented not of their deedes.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried vp, that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared.

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of deuils working miracles, which goe forth vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

15 * Behold, I come as a thiefe. Blessed is hee that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walke naked and they see his shame. * Mat 24.44

16 And hee gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seuenth Angell powred out his viall into the ayre, and there came a great voyce out of the Temple of heauen, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great Citie was diuided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came into remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

Ier.25.15

20 And euery Iland fled away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell vpon men a great haile out of heauen, euery stone about the weight of a talent, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3 4 A woman araied in scarlet with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth on the beast, 5 which is Babylon 8 The punishment of the whore 14 The victory of the Lambe.

AND there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come hither, I will shew vnto thee the iudgement of the great whore, that sitteth vpon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth haue committed fornication, & the inhabiters of the earth haue beene made drunke with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried me away in the spirit into the wildernesse: & I saw a woman sit vpon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and ‖ decked with gold and precious stone, and pearles, hauing a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthynes of her fornication.

† Or, gilded.

5 And vpon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF ‖ HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

‖ Or, fornications.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the Saints, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the Angel said vnto me, Wherefore didst thou marueile? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carieth her, which hath the seuen heads and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder (whose names were not written in the booke of life from

the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wisedome. The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seuen Kings, fiue are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when hee commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, euen hee is the eight, and is of the seuen, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten kings, which haue receiued no kingdome as yet: but receiue power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power and strength vnto the beast.

14 These shall make warre with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: * For hee is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull. *1. Tim. 6. chap. 19. 1

15 And hee saith vnto mee, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shal eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great Citie, which reigneth ouer the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her. 9 The kings of the earth lament for her.

AND after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, and the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cryed mightily with a strong voyce, saying, * Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of euery foule spirit, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird: *Chap. 14.

3 For all nations haue drunke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the ‖ abundance of her delicacies. ‖Or, power.

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen, saying, Come out of her, my people, that yee be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues:

5 For her sinnes haue reached vnto heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her euen as she rewarded you, and double vnto her double according vnto her workes: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double:

7 How much shee hath glorified her selfe, and liued deliciously, so much torment and sorrow giue her: for she
Isai. 47. 8. saith in her heart, I sit a *Queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall be vtterly burnt with fire, for strong is the Lord God, who iudgeth her.

9 And the Kings of the earth, who haue committed fornication, and liued deliciously with her, shall bewaile her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoake of her burning:

10 Standing afarre off for the feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mighty citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchants of the earth shall weepe and mourne ouer her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

12 The merchandise of golde, and siluer, and precious stones, and of pearles, and fine linnen, and purple, and
or, swete. silke, and scarlet, and all ‖ Thine wood, and all manner vessels of yuorie, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and yron, and marble,

13 And Cynamom, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine flowre, and wheate, and beasts, and sheepe, and horses, and charets,
or, bodies. and ‖ slaues, and soules of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty, and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afarre off for the feare of her torment, weeping and wayling,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linnen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearles:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought.

And

And euery shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and saylers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afarre off,

18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like vnto this great city?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed weeping and wayling, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets, for God hath auenged you on her.

21 And a mighty Angel tooke vp a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great citie Babylon bee throwen downe, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voyce of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers and trumpetters, shalbe heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman of whatsoeuer craft hee bee, shall bee found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee:

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voyce of the bridegroome and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceiued.

24 And in her was found the blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God prayſed for iudging the whore, and auenging the blood of his Saints. 7 The marriage of the Lambe.

AND after these things, I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: saluation, and glory, and honour, and power vnto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his iudgements, for he hath iudged the great whore which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants at her hand.

3 And againe they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose vp for euer and euer.

4 And the foure and twenty Elders, and the foure beasts fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voyce came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God all ye his seruants, and yee that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue honour to him for the marriage of the Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arayed in fine linnen, cleane and white: for the fine linnen is the righteousnesse of Saints.

Matt. 22. 2 9 And hee saith vnto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called vnto the mariage Supper of the Lambe. And he saith vnto mee, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feete to worship him: And he said
Chap. 22. 9 vnto me, * See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren, that haue the testimonie of Iesus, Worship God: for the testimony of Iesus is the spirit of prophesie.

11 And I saw heauen opened, and beholde a white horse, and hee that sate vpon him was called faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse he doth iudge and make warre.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himselfe.

Psal. 63. 2. 13 * And hee was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called. The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heauen followed him vpon white horses, clothed in fine linnen, white and cleane.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe sword, that with it hee should smite the nations: and hee shall rule them with a rod of yron: and hee treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And hee hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, * KING OF KINGS, AND LORD
Dan. 7. 14 OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the Sunne, and he cryed with a lowd voyce, saying to all the foules that flie in the midst of heauen, Come and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God:

18 That ye may eate the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captiues, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And

19 And I saw the beasts and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against him that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him that false prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which hee deceiued them that had receiued the marke of the beast, and them that worshipped his image: These both were cast aliue into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sate vpon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowles were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeeres. 6 The first resurrection. 7 Satan let loose againe, 10 cast into the lake. 12 The last generall resurrection.

AND I saw an Angell come downe from heaven, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And hee layd hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeeres;

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp, and set a seale vpon him, that he should deceiue the nations no more, till the thousand yeeres should be fulfilled: and after that, he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had receiued his marke vpon their foreheads, or in their hands, and they liued and they reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead liued not againe vntill the thousand yeeres were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be Priests of God, and of Christ, and shal reigne with him a thousand yeeres.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shalbe loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth: * Gog and Magog, to

*Ezek. 32. and 39. 1.

to gather them together to battle, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went vpon the breadth of the earth, and compassed the campe of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: and fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for euer and euer.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on it, from whose face the earth and the heauen fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before
Chap. 3. 5. God: and the bookes were opened: and another * booke was opened, which is the booke of life: and the dead were iudged out of those things which were written in the bookes, according to their workes.

13 And the Sea gaue vp the dead which were in it:
Gr. graue. and death and || hell deliuered vp the dead which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their workes.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heauen and a new earth. 10 The heauenly Ierusalem. 23 Shee needeth no Sunne. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches vnto her.

Esai. 65. 17. 2. Pet. 3. 13. AND * I saw a new heauen and a new earth: for the first heauen & the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

2 And I Iohn saw the holy Citie, new Hierusalem comming downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shall be with them, and be their God.

Chap. 7. 17. 4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more paine: for the former things are passed away.

5 And

5 And hee that sate vpon the throne, said, *Behold, I make all things new. And he said vnto me, Write: for these words are true and faithfull. *2.Cor.

6 And hee sayd vnto mee, It is done: I am Alpha, and Omega, the beginning and the end. *I will giue vnto him that is athirst, of the fountaine of the water of life, freely. *Chap.1. and 22. *Isai.55.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my sonne.

8 But the fearefull, and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all lyars, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with mee, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And hee caried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountaine, and shewed me that great citie, the holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her light was like vnto a stone most precious; euen like a Jasper stone, cleare as Christall,

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East three gates, on the North three gates, on the South three gates, and on the West three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the names of the twelue Apostles of the Lambe.

15 And hee that talked with mee, had a golden reede to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lyeth foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and hee measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and fortie, and foure cubites, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Jasper, and the citie was pure gold, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was Iasper, the second Saphir, the third a Chalcedonie, the fourth an Emerald,

20 The fift Sardonix, the sixt Sardius, the seuenth Chrysolite, the eight Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chrysoprasus, the eleuenth a Iacinct, the twelfth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, euery seuerall gate was of one pearle, and the streete of the citie was pure gold, as it were transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein: For the Lord God Almighty, and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

y 60.19 23 * And the citie had no neede of the Sunne, neither of the Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

y 60.3. 24 * And the nations of them which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth doe bring their glory and honour into it.

y 60.11 25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lambes booke of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of the water of life. 5 The light of the Citie of God is himselfe. 18 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as Chrystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the midst of the streete of it, and of either side of the riuer, was there the tree of life, which bare twelue manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall bee no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall bee in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shall bee in their foreheads.

5 * And

5 * And there shall bee no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the Sunne, for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euer and euer. * Cha. 21

6 And hee said vnto mee, These sayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickely: Blessed is hee that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this booke.

8 And I Iohn saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seene, I fell downe, to worship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he vnto me, * See thou doe it not: for I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke; worship God. * Cha. 1

10 And hee saith vnto mee, Seale not the sayings of the prophesie of this booke: for the time is at hand.

11 Hee that is vniust, let him bee vniust still: and hee which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him bee righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickely, and my reward is with mee, to giue euery man according as his worke shall bee. * Rom.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the first and the last. * Esa. 4 and 44

14 Blessed are they that doe his Commandements, that they may haue right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth and maketh a lie.

16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angell, to testifie vnto you these things in the Churches, I am the roote and the offspring of Dauid, and the bright and morning Starre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. * And let him that is athirst, Come. And whosoeuer will, let him take the water of life freely. * Esa. 5

18 For I testifie vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke, * If any man shall adde vnto these things, God shall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke. * Deu. pron.

19 And

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the booke of this prophecie, God shall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy Citie, and from the things which are written in this booke.

20 Hee which testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly, Amen. Euen so, Come Lord Iesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

¶ IMPRINTED AT LONdon by BONHAM NORTON and IOHN BILL, Printers to the Kings most Excellent Maiestie.

ANNO. 1623